



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

UC-NRLF



\$B 88 004

REESE LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA.

Received

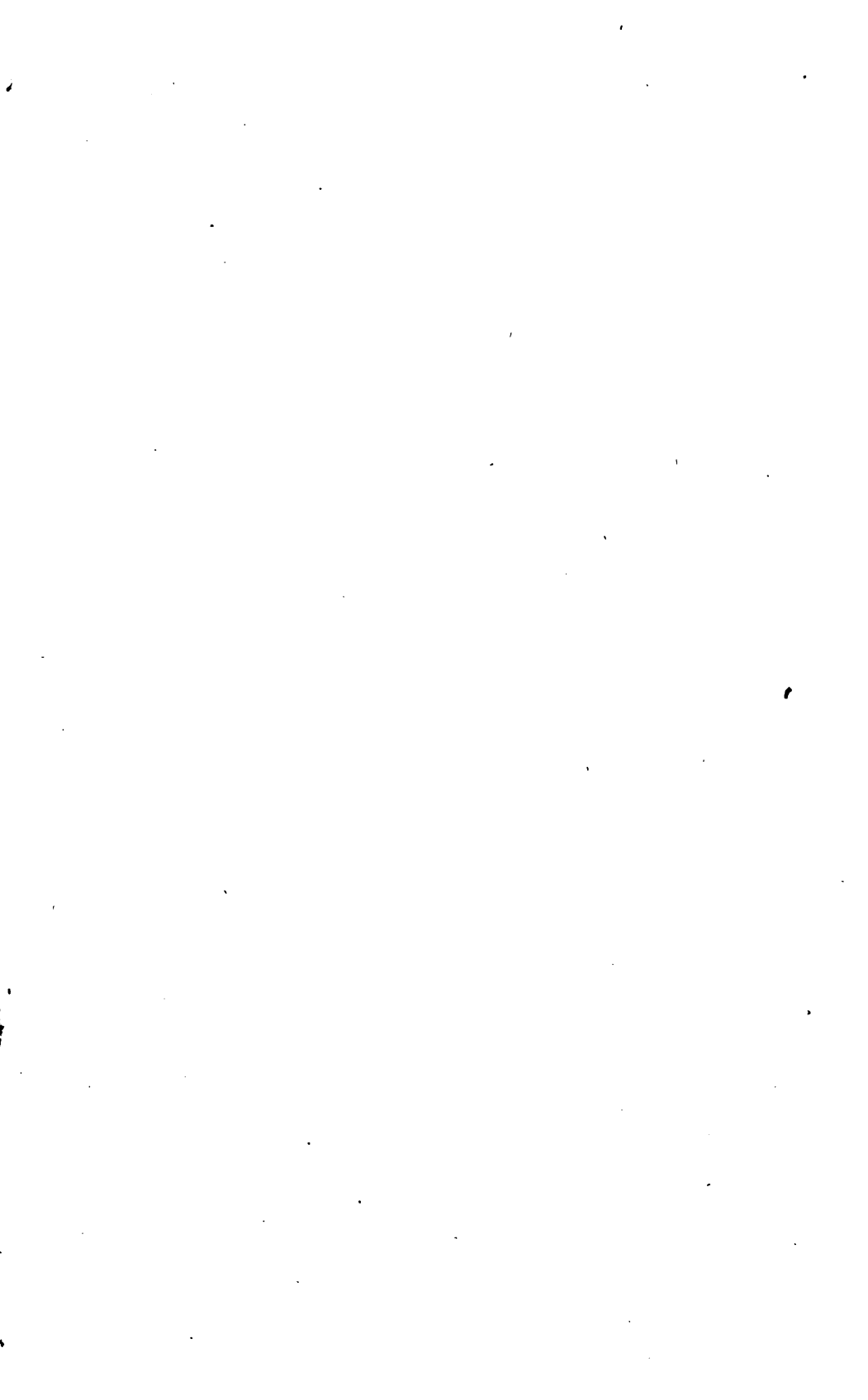
Feb.

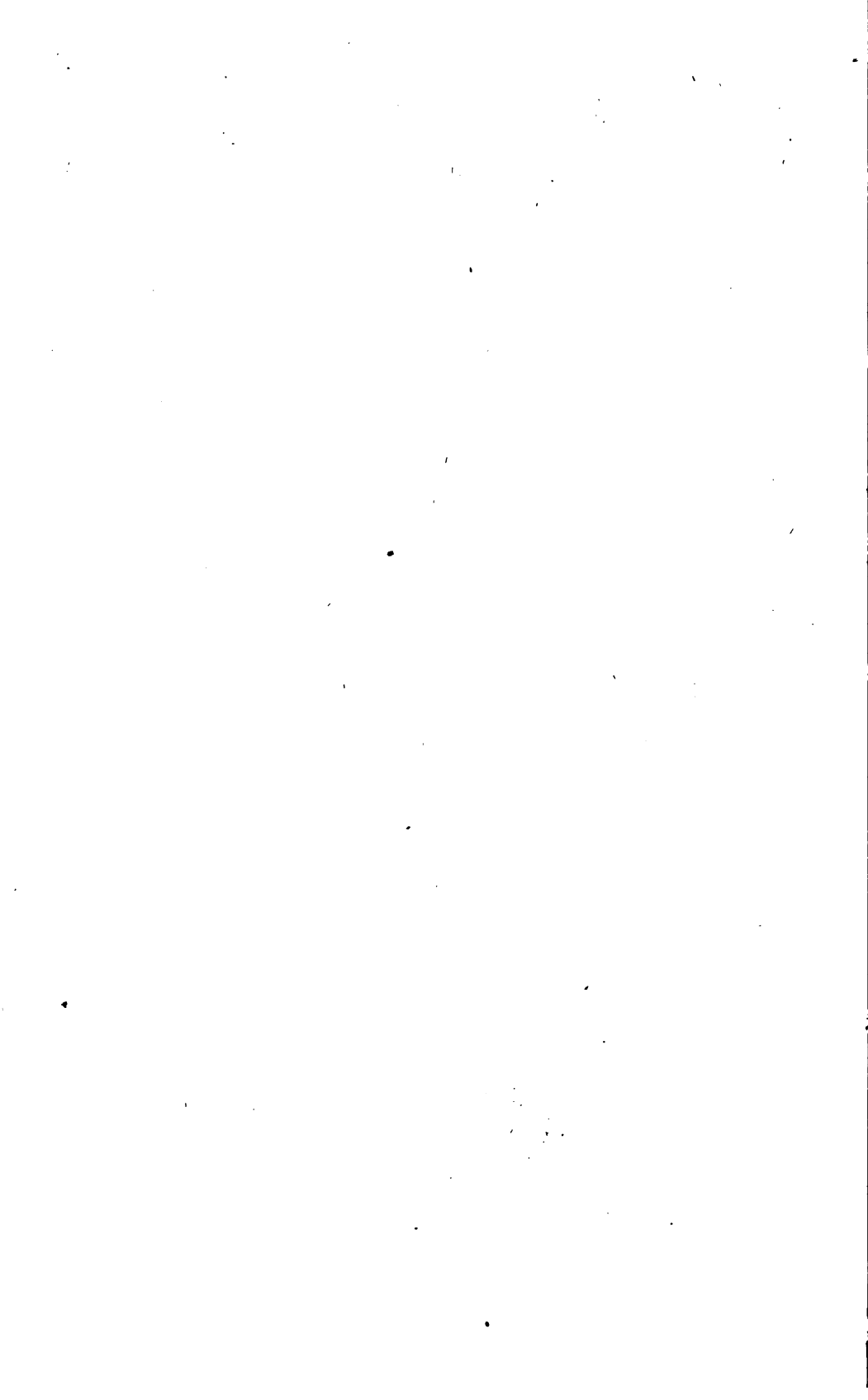
. 1898.

Accessions No. *695-90* . *Class No.*

See 83 Report of Regents. (of State of N. Y.).

Ancient *Solenaster* in Albany
See N. Y. Teacher, Vol. I, 206





ANNALS
OF
PUBLIC EDUCATION

IN THE
STATE OF NEW YORK,

From 1626 to 1746.

By DANIEL J. PRATT, A. M.,
ASSISTANT SECRETARY OF THE REGENTS OF THE UNIVERSITY.

"SUNT HIC ETIAM SUA PRÆMIA LAUDI."



ALBANY:
THE ARGUS COMPANY, PRINTERS.
1872.

695-90

Entered, according to act of Congress, in the year eighteen hundred and seventy-one [January 10],

By DANIEL J. PRATT,

In the office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.

STATE OF NEW YORK:

IN SENATE CHAMBER,

ALBANY, March 29, 1871. }

Resolved, That three hundred copies of the *Annals of Public Education* in the State of New York, for the period from 1626 to 1746, be printed for the use of the Regents of the University, and two hundred copies for the use of the Senate.

By order,

HIRAM GALKINS,

Clerk.



P R E F A C E .

This volume is a collection of the official acts and historical records relating to public education within this State during the Dutch and a part of the English colonial periods, from 1626 to 1746, with such editorial statements as have been deemed appropriate, and, to some extent, necessary, to connect and explain the often fragmentary original records. If hereafter practicable, this work will be continued to about the year 1800.

Much of the material of these Annals has been preserved only in manuscript in the State archives; other printed fragments are widely scattered, and are not readily accessible in the absence of any catalogue or digest of authorities referring to this subject.

The results of the few attempts hitherto made in any portion of this field have been carefully sought and freely used, with due acknowledgment. Dunshee's "History of the School of the Reformed Dutch Church in New York" has been of greater service than any other single printed collection. That school having been the first, and for some time the only public one within the colony, its history is almost co-extensive with that of public education for a number of years. The pre-eminence of this little work in its special field is attested by the fact that it is almost the sole authority quoted, for the colonial period, in Boese's "History of Education in the City of New York." Valentine's Manual of the Corporation of New York, for 1863, contains a sketch of "Schools and Schoolmasters in the time of the Dutch," which includes some items not mentioned by other authors. Occasional allusions to the subject of education occur in O'Callaghan's History of New Netherland, Brodhead's History of New York, and other works of like general character. A "Special report on the present state of education in the United States and other countries," by the late Superintendent of Public Instruction of this State, published in 1867, devotes two pages to a cursory sketch of its educational history during the colonial era.

The principal official source of information for the earlier portion of the period included in the volume, is the "New York

Historical Manuscripts," Dutch and English, in the office of the Secretary of State, of which there are about 100 folio volumes. The Dutch manuscripts were translated some fifty years since, under State authority, by Francis Adrian Van der Kemp, and are now being re-translated by the eminent archivist, Dr. E. B. O'Callaghan, under the title of "Records of New Netherland." Of Van der Kemp's translation there are twenty-four volumes, which are known among antiquarians as the "Albany Records." We regret that most of the passages which we have had occasion to quote, not having been reached by the new translator, must exhibit the marked imperfections of style which characterize the Albany Records. Dr. O'Callaghan has also prepared a full calendar and index of the original manuscripts, a small edition of which has been published. By the aid of this invaluable work, any special subject of colonial history contained therein may be readily investigated. The Documentary and the Colonial Histories of the State—the former in four and the latter in eleven quarto volumes, large editions of which have been published—contain copies of some of these manuscripts, including a few referring to educational affairs, especially among the Indians. The corporation archives of New York city include a collection known as the "New Amsterdam Records," an unpublished translation of which, in seven volumes, was made some years since by Dr. O'Callaghan. These records contain a few items in regard to the schools of that city during the period of the Dutch administration. The manuscript "Correspondence of the Classis of Amsterdam," procured in Holland, some years since, by Mr. Brodhead, to which occasional reference is made by historians, throws additional light upon this special subject.

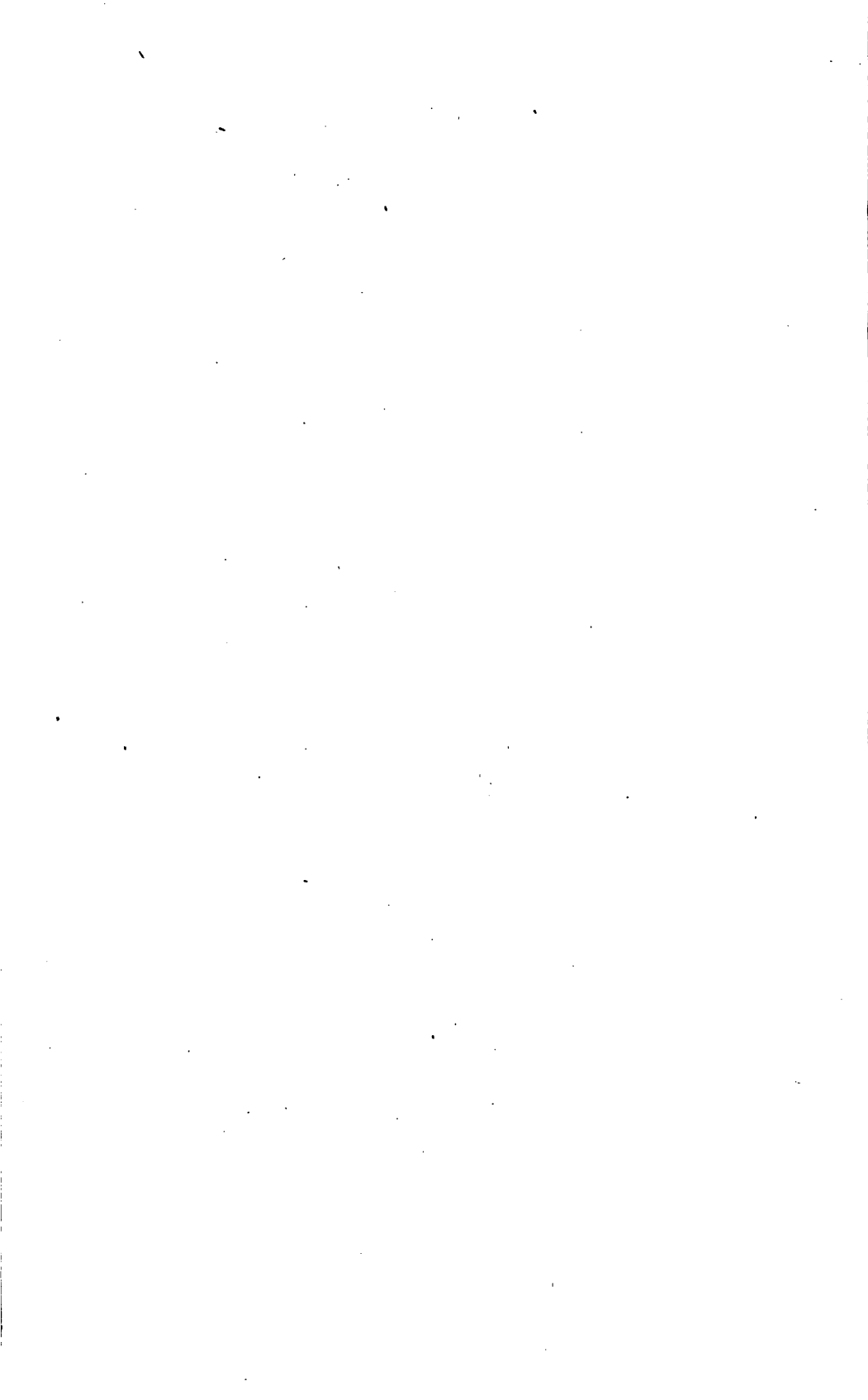
Among other sources of information, for the period included in the present volume (1626–1746), may be mentioned the printed journals of the Legislative Council and Assembly, from 1691 onward; the colonial laws, most of which are found in the extant compilations, though a number of obsolete ones of special historical interest have been preserved only in their original manuscript form, in the office of the Secretary of State; O'Callaghan's "Register of New Netherland" and "Laws of New Netherland;" Valentine's Corporation Manual of N. Y. City for a series of years; the annual reports of the "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts;" miscellaneous works of research, including local histories, prominent among which are Munsell's "Annals of Albany;" facts communicated in writing by several well-informed investigators, who have kindly

aided us in our researches; and lastly, old newspapers, especially the files of the *New York Gazette*, etc., as preserved in the Library of the New York Historical Society. Specific references to these sources of information will be made in connection with each quotation, it being an important part of the present design to verify every statement, and thus facilitate further investigation, in the hope that the materials for a tolerably full history of education in the State may finally be secured. If this work, with its proposed continuation, shall contribute to a better understanding of the origin and growth of the present system of education in the Empire State, the chief design of the undertaking will be accomplished.

It is proper to add, that the greater part of the material embraced in this volume was first published in the "Proceedings of the University Convocation of the State of New York", for the years 1868 and 1869.

The plates from which these "Annals" were first printed, were destroyed by the great fire which occurred at Weed, Parsons & Co.'s printing establishment, in April, 1871. It thus became necessary, in carrying out the foregoing order of the Senate, to reset the entire work. A few errors and considerable new material having, meanwhile, come under the author's notice, he has availed himself of this opportunity, at the cost of no little time and labor, to supply a revised and enlarged edition of the original work ordered by the Senate.

The author cannot forbear here to express, in a general way, his indebtedness to the several gentlemen mentioned by name in the body of the volume, who have aided in the collection of these historical facts; as well as to all those who have, in any way, encouraged him in this undertaking. Further information relative to either the general or local history of education in this State, prior to 1800, for any future editions of this work, and for its intended continuation from 1746, will be thankfully received and duly acknowledged.



CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
Preface.....	i

CHAPTER I.

FIRST PERIOD.—PUBLIC EDUCATION IN THE DUTCH (OR HOLLAND) COLONY OF NEW NETHERLAND, 1626-1664.....	1
--	---

CHAPTER II.

SECOND PERIOD.—PUBLIC EDUCATION IN THE COLONY OF NEW YORK, 1664-1784.	
---	--

PART I.

From the Capitulation by the Dutch to the first legislative act for founding a College, 1664-1746.....	57
Catalogue of Schoolmasters mentioned in this volume.....	149

PART II.

The founding of King's (afterwards Columbia) College [to be published hereafter].	
---	--

PART III, ETC.

[To be published hereafter]

CHAPTER III.

THE FOUNDING OF THE UNIVERSITY OF THE STATE OF NEW YORK, UNDER THE ACTS OF 1784 AND 1787, AND THE FURTHER HISTORY OF EDUCATION IN THE STATE TO THE YEAR 1800 [to be published hereafter].	
---	--





A N N A L S
OF
PUBLIC EDUCATION
IN THE
STATE OF NEW YORK,
INCLUDING THE COLONIAL ERA.

CHAPTER I.

FIRST PERIOD.

PUBLIC EDUCATION IN THE DUTCH (OR HOLLAND) COLONY OF
NEW NETHERLAND, 1626-1664.

The following extracts, from comparatively recent writers, illustrate the customs and policy of the Hollanders in regard to education prior to and in connection with the settlement of New Netherland:

The Dutch were eminently a . . . charitable, well educated and moral people. . . . Neither the perils of war, nor the busy pursuit of gain, nor the excitement of political strife, ever caused them to neglect the duty of educating their offspring to enjoy that freedom for which their fathers had fought. Schools were everywhere provided, at the public expense, with good schoolmasters, to instruct the children of all classes in the usual branches of education; and the consistories of the churches took zealous care to have their youth thoroughly taught the catechism and the articles of religion.¹

It was the custom, after the Reformation in Holland, to send out with emigrants going to any of its colonies, however few in number, a well-qualified schoolmaster, who was a member of the church, and accredited, by his competence and piety, to take charge of the instruction of children and youth. During the absence or want of a minister, he was bound to conduct public worship, by reading a sermon, offering prayers, etc., on the Sabbath, and on other occasions. With the earliest agricultural settlement of Manhattan island and its vicinity, such a schoolmaster and *voorleser* [clerk or reader] was sent

¹ Brodhead's History of New York, pp. 461-463.

out, and from the earliest period the school has continued to this day.¹

Schools have always been in existence in New York since its settlement by the Dutch. The founders of the colony brought with them from Holland the institutions of their native land; its industry, its catholicity of spirit, its care for the religious and educational welfare of the people.²

"No other religion was to be publicly tolerated or allowed in New Netherland, save that then taught and exercised by authority in the Reformed Church of the United Provinces," for the inculcation of which the [West India] Company promised to support and maintain good and fit preachers, schoolmasters and comforters of the sick.³

No principle was more deeply engraved on the heart of the Hollander than that "the church and the school must be maintained."⁴

The establishment of schools and the appointment of schoolmasters, rested conjointly with the [West India] Company and the Classis of Amsterdam; and it is from this circumstance that much relating to the early history of the school under consideration has been preserved.⁵

When a school is spoken of under the Dutch administration, special reference is invariably made to the official public school, supported by the authorities, and in connection with the established [Reformed Dutch] Church, the schoolmasters whereof were appointed by the West India Company. From the first organization of the school, till the year 1808, when a special board of trustees was appointed, the supervision and management of the school was in the hands of the deacons. . . . No private school teachers . . . could follow their calling without a license from the civil and ecclesiastical authorities.⁶

1626. When a colonial government was organized, 1626, by Kieft,⁷ the first Director General, we find the place of a clergyman supplied, to a certain extent, by Sebastian Jans Crol and Jan Huyck, two "Krak-besoeckers," "Ziekentroosters," or "Comforters of the Sick." . . . Exigency of circumstances, in a new settlement, sometimes demanded that the exercise of the functions pertaining to the offices of the minister, the schoolmaster, and the Krank-besoecker, devolved upon the same individual; so that we might with propriety be justified in claiming the introduction of public education as early as 1626; but as the term schoolmaster is not expressly applied to either of the Krank-besoeckers, we will waive the position.⁸

The earliest official act relating to public education in New Netherland is contained in the so-called

¹ Rev. Thomas De Witt, D. D., in his introduction to Dunshee's *History of the School of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church in the City of New York*, pp. 7, 8.

² Supt. Rice's Special Report on the condition of Education, p. 77.

³ O'Callaghan's *History of New Netherland*, i, 220.

⁴ Strong's *History of Flatbush*, p. 108.

⁵ Dunshee, p. 25.

⁶ Dunshee, p. 33.

⁷ This should have been *Minuit*.

⁸ Dunshee, pp. 27, 28.

Freedoms and Exemptions,

Granted by the West India Company to all Patroons, Masters or Private Persons who will plant colonies in New Netherland, 7 June, 1629.

XXVII. The Patroons and colonists shall in particular, and in the speediest manner, endeavor to find out ways and means whereby they may supply a minister and schoolmaster, that thus the service of God and zeal for religion may not grow cool and be neglected among them, and they shall, for the first, procure a comforter of the sick there.¹

This decree was reenacted in 1630, in the

New Project of Freedoms and Exemptions.

28. The Patroons shall also particularly exert themselves to find speedy means to maintain a clergyman and schoolmaster, in order that Divine service and zeal for religion may be planted in that country; and send, at first, a comforter for the sick thither.²

The city of Amsterdam, some years later, undertook to provide schoolhouses for new settlements, and provisionally to support schoolmasters, as appears from the following:

Draft of Conditions offered by the city of Amsterdam to Emigrants to New Netherland. No date: probably 1656.

Remarks of Directors of West India Company.

4

To the end that the said colonists may gain their livelihood there safely, honestly and prosperously, the city aforesaid doth beforehand guarantee as follows: *Fiat.* [Let it be done.]

* * * *

7

Said city shall cause to be erected about the market, or in a more convenient place, a public building suitable for Divine service: *item*, also a house for a school, which can likewise be occupied by the person who will hereafter be sexton, psalm-setter and schoolmaster; the city shall, besides, have a house built for the Minister. *Fiat.*

8

The city aforesaid shall provisionally provide and pay the salary of a Minister and schoolmaster, unless their High *Fiat.*

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., ii, 557. O'Callaghan's Laws of New Netherland, p. 9.

² N. Y. Col. Doc., i, 99.

Mightinesses or the Company think otherwise.¹

* * * * *

✓ Among the officials of that early period, we are especially interested in the schoolmasters, memorials of some of whom have been preserved.

✓ From all that has been discovered, the first schoolmaster in New Amsterdam was Adam Roelanstén.² . . . He was a resident of this city as early at least as the year 1633, as appears from an affidavit made by him in 1638, setting forth certain misconduct which he observed in one Greetje Reiners, in the year 1633, at a place called the Old Magazine.³ * * *

Mr. Valentine says, he "probably had pursued this calling during all the time of his residence," i. e., from 1633 to 1638, at which latter date he removed to Renselaerswyck. Mr. Dunshee speaks with more confidence upon this point, but fails to cite any additional authority; nor are we able to find Roelantsen's name in the list of officials to which he refers in the following paragraph :

1633. In the enumeration of the [West India] Company's officials . . . Everardus Bogardus is mentioned as officiating as minister at Fort Amsterdam, and Adam Roelansden as the *first* schoolmaster.

Here, then, in accordance with the custom of the age, the usage of the home government, and by charter stipulations, we have the introduction of the first schoolmaster in Manhattan; . . . and although it is probable that at times the school was kept somewhat irregularly, owing to the unsettled state of affairs arising from Indian depredations, and the hostile attitude and aggressions of the colonists in New England, yet the records furnish direct and indisputable evidence of the efforts made for its continuance and support.⁴

Further particulars in regard to the life and character of Roelantsen, some of which, we regret to say, are quite discreditable to "the first schoolmaster," are reserved for separate biographical notices of schoolmasters, which it is proposed to introduce hereafter. It may, however, be due to Roelantsen to add, that even Domine Bogardus was accused of immorality and excess, and that the standard of public virtue was not remarkably high at that time. Dr. O'Callaghan says:

The state of morals in New Amsterdam was, at this period [1638], by no means healthy, owing as well to the description of persons which trade brought thither, as to the absence, in a great part, of an agricultural population.⁵

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., i, 619, 620. See, also, pp. 631, 636, 637, and O'Callaghan's *Laws of New Netherland*, pp. 289, 240.

² More properly spelled *Roelantsen*.

³ Valentine's *Corporation Manual*, 1863, p. 559. Albany Records (MS.), i, 52.

⁴ Dunshee, pp. 28, 29. Alb. Rec., i, 52.

⁵ O'Call. N. N., i, 185.

Though "the mass of the people resident at the Mannhattans were unable or ill qualified either to read or write,"¹ the value of education seems to have been highly appreciated; for we find that as early as 1642, it was customary, in marriage contracts, whenever the bride was a widow having children, for the parties to "promise to bring up the children decently, according to their ability, to provide them with necessary clothing and food, to keep them at school, to let them learn reading, writing and a good trade;" to which was sometimes added, "as honest parents ought and are bound to do, and as they can answer before God and men."²

The first direct mention of a public tax for the support of schools occurs in the

Proposed Articles for the Colonization and Trade of New Netherland. 1638.

8. Each householder and inhabitant shall bear such tax and public charge as shall hereafter be considered proper for the maintenance of clergymen, comforters for the sick, schoolmasters, and such like necessary officers; and the Director and Council there shall be written to touching the form hereof, in order, on receiving further information hereupon, it be rendered the least onerous and vexatious.³

That a school was in contemplation in Beaverwyck (Albany), as early as 1643, appears by the following extract from a letter written by Arendt Van Curler to the Patroon of Renselaerswyck, dated June 16, 1643:

As for the church, it is not yet contracted for, nor even begun. . . . That which I intend to build this summer in the pine grove will be 34 feet long by 19 feet wide. It will be large enough for the first three or four years to preach in, and can afterwards always serve for the residence of the sexton, or for a school.⁴

The salaries proposed to be paid in those early times are exhibited in the following

Report of the Board of Accounts in New Netherland. 1644.⁵

Estimate of the Expenses which the [West India] Company would have to bear in New Netherland for the following persons, to be rationed at their own expense:

1 director, whose monthly salary should be fl. 250, to board himself, is yearly.....	fl. 3,000
* * * * *	
1 clergyman, a fl. 120 per month.....	1,440
1 schoolmaster, precentor and sexton, a fl. 30....	360

¹ O'Call. N. N., i, 187.

² N. Y. Y. Hist. MSS., ii, 35, 51; iii, 70; iv, 20. O'Callaghan's MS. Records of N. N., ii, 37, 48, 102, 127.

³ N. Y. Col. Doc., i, 112.

⁴ O'Call. N. N., i, 459. [From the Renselaerswyck MSS.]

⁵ N. Y. Col. Doc., i, 155.

A similar estimate, in 1661, is more liberal to the schoolmaster, as compared with the director, though both are reduced to the smallest possible amount :

One director, on a salary of 100 guilders per month, and board-wages a year, 300 guilders. 1.20

One comforter of the sick, to act also as schoolmaster, 18 guilders per month, and board-wages a year, 80 guilders.¹ [A florin and guilder were each equivalent to about 40 cents, U. S. currency.]

The first effort to build a schoolhouse occurred, according to Mr. Dunshee, as early as 1642, although the documentary evidence quoted by him does not clearly establish the date. He says :

In 1642, the church on Broad street having become somewhat dilapidated and reproachful in appearance, an effort was made to procure a new one, and at the same time was commenced the laudable undertaking of building a schoolhouse with suitable accommodations (p. 30).

Mr. Dunshee proceeds to quote from the Remonstrance of New Netherland, made in 1649, which states that "the bowl has been going around a long time for the purpose of collecting money for erecting a schoolhouse;" but this does not intimate that the "long time" began in 1642. He also refers to Dr. O'Callaghan's account of the building of the church in 1642 (Hist. of N. N., i, 260), which, however, contains no allusion to a schoolhouse at that time. The following statement of the condition of education in 1646, contains the only allusion made by the learned Doctor, to a schoolhouse of earlier date, his sole authority being, as he informs us, the "Remonstrance of New Netherland," to which reference will hereafter be made :

Though a college had been founded in Massachusetts some nine years before, the authorities of New Netherland made little or no effort, up to this time, to establish a common or primary school in any part of this country. Some subscriptions had been entered into by the commonalty, for the purpose of erecting a schoolhouse in New Amsterdam, but these funds were also misappropriated, and this laudable undertaking failed in consequence.²

This unfortunate condition of education, in common with other public interests, seems to have resulted partly from the feebleness and poverty of the colony, and partly from the dissensions which prevailed during Director Kieft's administration.

"Where the shepherd errs the sheep go astray." Drunkenness

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., ii, 169.

² O'Call. N. N., i, 396.

and broils were of frequent occurrence. The people were "without discipline, and approaching to a savage state." "A fourth part of the city of New Amsterdam consisted of grogshops and houses, where nothing is to be got but tobacco and beer." Religion and education felt the baneful effects of these evil influences. . . . Such was the state of disorganization into which the public affairs had fallen.¹

In 1647, Director Kieft was superseded by Petrus Stuyvesant, whose commission was dated at the Hague, July 28, 1646, and who entered upon his duties May 27, 1647. The new Director General undertook to reform the prevalent abuses, and for this purpose drew up certain "propositions to the members in council assembled," dated November 11, 1647. The fifth of these propositions, and the action of the Council thereon, are recorded in parallel columns, according to the usage of the times, as follows:

5thly. Whereas, by want of proper place, no school has been kept in three months, by which the youth is spoiled, so is proposed, where a convenient place may be adapted to keep the youth from the street and under a strict subordination.²

By the Council is decreed the same as on the 4th article above. [Viz.: Decreed by the Council, as this point particularly interests the commonalty, to propose it to the nine Tribunes, so that the best means may be employed, at the smallest expenses of the commonalty.]

The statement that for "want of a proper place, no school had been held in three months," must have reference to the public school in connection with the church; for one Jan Stevensen was actually teaching at the time, and had been so doing for five years.³

It thus appears that private schools had already been established in New Amsterdam, although as before stated, no person could teach without a license from the civil and ecclesiastical authorities.

The "Nine Tribunes," commonly called the "Nine Men," were chosen by the Director General and Council from double that number of persons selected by the people, to give their advice when called on, and to assist in promoting the welfare of the commonalty, as well as that of the country.⁴ In accordance with the above recommendation of the Council, the Director communicated his views to the Nine Men in the following terms:

To the nine elected Tribunes, representing the Commonalty of Manhattans, Breukelen, Amerfoort and Pavonia:

Dear Friends: A sudden and unhappy accident, and its following pains prevent my assisting at your meeting and making proposals in

¹ O'Call. N. N., i, 395, 396.

² Alb. Rec., vii, 106.

³ Dunshee, p. 33.

⁴ O'Call. N. N., ii, 36, 37.

person as I intended, and concluding what means are the most advisable to adopt for the common weal and can be employed with the least grievance to our dear subjects.

* * * * *

3dly. Not less necessary than the former article is the building of a new school and dwelling house for the schoolmaster, for the benefit of the commonalty and the education of the youth. We are inclined to bear personally and in behalf of the Company a reasonable proportion, and continue to do so in the future, and promote this glorious work. Meanwhile it is required to make some previous arrangement to provide a convenient place during next winter, either in one of the outhouses belonging to the Attorney-General's Department, to which I should give the preference, or any other convenient place, as may be approved by the church wardens.

* * * * *

Done in haste, in our bedroom, on the 14 Nov., 1647.

(Signed) Yours and the commonalty's well willing,

P. STUYVESANT.¹

We are unable to find any evidence that the Nine Men responded favorably to this proposition, and it appears from subsequent events that nothing was done by them.

In 1649, in consequence of disagreement between the Director and the Nine Men, the latter, under the leadership of Adriaen Van der Donck, prepared a memorial to the States-General of Holland, to which was annexed the so-called "Vertoogh" or "Remonstrance of New Netherland," setting forth, among other things, "the reasons and cause of the great decay of New Netherland," and "in what manner New Netherland should be relieved." Among the "reasons" enumerated, the following statement occurs:

The plate has been a long time passed around for a common school which has been built with words, for, as yet, the first stone is not laid; some materials have only been provided. However, the money given for the purpose hath all disappeared and is mostly spent, so that it falls somewhat short; and nothing permanent has as yet been effected for this purpose.²

Under the head, "In what manner New Netherland should be relieved," we find the following:

* * * * *

. . . It is doubtful but Divine worship must be entirely intermitted in consequence of the clergyman's departure, and the Company's inability. There ought to be also a public school provided with at least two good teachers, so that the youth, in so wild a country, where there are so many dissolute people, may, first of all, be well

¹ Alb. Rec., vii, 107, 108.

² N. Y. Col. Doc., i, 300.

instructed and indoctrinated not only in reading and writing, but also in the knowledge and fear of the Lord. Now, the school is kept very irregularly, by this one or that, according to his fancy, as long as he thinks proper. There ought to be, likewise, asylums for aged men, for orphans, and similar institutions.¹

Cornelis van Tienhoven, Secretary to the Director and Council, replies to this part of the Remonstrance:

Although the new schoolhouse, toward which the commonalty contributed something, has not yet been built, it is not the Director, but the church wardens, who have charge of the funds. The Director is busy providing materials. Meanwhile a place has been selected for a school, of which Jan Cornelissen has charge. The other teachers keep school in hired houses, so that the youth are not in want of schools to the extent of the circumstances of the country. 'Tis true there is no Latin school nor academy; if the commonalty require such, they can apply for it and furnish the necessary funds.

* * Their High Mightinesses granted those duties to the Company to facilitate garrisons, and the payment of the expenses attendant thereupon, and not for building hospitals and orphan asylums, churches and schoolhouses for the people. * * *

If they [the people of New Netherland] are such patriots as they appear to be, let them be leaders in generous contributions for such laudable objects, and not complain when the Directors requested a collection toward the erection of a church and a school.²

The "other teachers" referred to by the Secretary, seem to have been Jan Stevensen and Aryaen Jansen, accounts of whom as schoolmasters are found from 1643 to 1649, but nowhere as connected with the church school, of which this Jan Cornelissen was the second teacher.³

About this time Cornelissen, perhaps in consequence of the dissensions which had arisen, and the neglect to provide a suitable place for a school, signified his intention to resign; whereupon, Director Stuyvesant wrote to the Classis of Amsterdam "for a pious, well-qualified and diligent schoolmaster," adding, that "nothing is of greater importance than the right, early instruction of youth."⁴

This application seems to have been referred by the Classis to the Directors of the West India Company, from whose letters to Director Stuyvesant we make the following extracts:

JAN. 27, 1649. We will make use of the first opportunity to supply you with a well-instructed schoolmaster; and shall inform our-

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., i, 317.

N. Y. Col. Doc., i, 423, 424, 425, 431.

² Dunshee, p. 35, who also quotes, N. Amst. Rec., v, 31, 150, 169.

³ Dunshee, p. 35. Brodhead, i, 508. Cor. Cl. Amst.

selves about the person¹ living at Hærlem, whom your Honor recommended.²

FEB. 16, 1650. We appoint, at your request, a schoolmaster, who shall also act as comforter of the sick. He is considered an honest and pious man, and shall embark at the first opportunity.³

APRIL 15, 1650. The schoolmaster for whom you solicited comes in the same vessel with this letter. The Lord grant that he may for a long time exemplify the favorable testimony which he carried with him from here, to the edification of the youth.⁴

Mr. Brodhead (p. 516) says the Classis of Amsterdam sent out Verstius, and refers to a letter of January 10, 1650, which seems to belong to the Correspondence of the Classis. This tends to confirm the opinion that Verstius was the teacher referred to by Stuyvesant and the West India Company.

In the early part of 1650, Secretary van Tienhoven drew up a paper entitled "Information relative to taking up land in New Netherland, in the form of colonies or private *bouweries*" [farms], which seems to have been intended for the use of the Directors of the West India Company, to facilitate emigration to New Netherland. After describing "those lands which are actually the most convenient and the best, and ought to be occupied the earliest, where and how located," he states "what description of people are best adapted for agriculture in New Netherland, and to perform the most service and return the most profit in the beginning; and it is interesting to find evidence of continued regard for education, and a recognition of its practical utility in new settlements, in the fact that he includes as one of the eleven classes of persons whose services are needed:

A clergyman, comforter of the sick, or precentor, who could also act as schoolmaster.⁵

We have already referred to the condition of morals as quite unfavorable. The following letter from the Directors of the West India Company to Stuyvesant, dated April 4, 1652, is interesting in this connection:

In ship Romein is embarked as super-cargo a person named Fredrick Alkis, who has been a schoolmaster at Hoorn. He writes a good hand, but we know little else of him. He is recommended to us by a man of quality, and solicited that it might be permitted to him to remain there if he should be pleased with the country, which of course this college [meaning the Directors] could not reject,

¹ This person seems to have been William Verstius. [Sometimes spelled *Vestius* and *Vestens*.]

² Alb. Rec., iv, 17.

³ Alb. Rec., iv, 23.

⁴ Alb. Rec., iv, 30.

⁵ N. Y. Col. Doc., i, 361.

although it is against our usual practice; but it is sometimes a difficult task to give a denial. If his conduct is as good as his pen, and a schoolmaster wanted, his person might come into consideration, although it might be in our opinion desirable to put him first to the test; as we have observed that your clime does not reform much the manners of individuals, of which there is yet much less hope if the chiefs of the administration set a bad example to others. In this respect we received many complaints by those who return from New Netherland, in respect of the Attorney-General, as of drunkenness and other vices. If he might continue such a disorderly life, then we shall be compelled to employ such means of restraint as we deem expedient.¹

The committee of the States-General, to whom the "Remonstrance" of 1649 had been referred, reported a "Provisional order for the government, preservation and peopling of New Netherland," which contained the following article:

VI. New Netherland being now provided with only one clergyman, orders shall be given, forthwith, for the calling and support of at least three more; one to attend to divine service at Rensselaer's colonie; the second in and around the city of New Amsterdam; and the third in the distant settlements; and the commonalty shall be obliged to cause the youth to be instructed by good schoolmasters.²

Owing to a strenuous resistance on the part of the Directors of the West India Company to the "Provisional Order" as a whole, it was not ratified by the States-General. The Directors themselves, however, seem to have finally regarded the wishes of the remonstrants in regard to the appointment of "at least two good schoolmasters," since they wrote to the Director-General, on the 4th of April, 1652, as follows:

We give our consent, above all this, that one public school may be established, for which one schoolmaster would be sufficient, and he might be engaged at £250 annually. We recommend you Jan de la Montagne, whom we have provisionally favored with the appointment. Your Hon. may appropriate the City Tavern for this purpose, if this is practicable.³ * * * *

[The City Tavern, subsequently named the Stadt Huys or City Hall, stood on the corner of Pearl street and Coenties slip. . . . The present site is known as 71 and 73 Pearl street.⁴ For a view and description of this ancient edifice, see Valentine's Manual, 1852, pp. 378, 403.]

The actual service of Montagne is established by the following minute:

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., i, 389. O'Call. N. N., ii, 134.

² Alb. Rec., iv, 74.

³ Alb. Rec., iv, 68.

⁴ Dunshee, p. 38.

On the petition of John Morice de la Montagne, the Director General and Council command the Comptroller to pay the supplicant three or four months of his wages.¹

The fact that this second school was commenced and carried on for a brief period, is clearly established; but the absence of any subsequent reference to it, leads to the strong inference that its existence was of short duration. The principal school, however, was uninterruptedly conducted by Vestens [Verstius], from 1650 to 1655.²

Having already seen that a school was in contemplation at Beverwyck in 1643, it is interesting to find that Andries Jansz. was employed as teacher in 1650.³ We infer from the statement in the next paragraph, that his service was of short duration.

The offices of clergyman and schoolmaster were nominally united in the person of Rev. Gideon Schaets, who was employed at Renselaerswyck Colonie in 1652, in addition to his regular services as clergyman of the colony, "to pay attention to the office of schoolmaster for old and young."⁴ Whether he actually officiated in this capacity does not appear from any subsequent records which we have seen.

In 1654, Verstius had petitioned the Classis of Amsterdam for an increase of salary,⁵ which seems not to have been granted.

The following Council minute occurs under date of January 26, 1655:

William Verstius, schoolmaster and chorister in this city, solicited the Council by a petition, as he had completed his service; and whereas there were now several persons fully competent to acquit themselves in this charge, that he might be favored with his dismissal, and permitted to return to Holland in the first ship.

On which petition was given the apostil, that it would be communicated to the Consistory and Ministers.⁶

The final action on the petition of Verstius for dismissal was as follows:

Whereas William Vestius, chorister and schoolmaster of this city, hath several times earnestly solicited leave to depart for the Fatherland, so is his request granted him; and in consequence thereof, have the Noble Lords of the Supreme Council, with the consent of the respected Consistory of this city, appointed Harmanus Van Hoboocken as chorister and schoolmaster of this city, at $\text{g}35$ per month, and $\text{g}100$ annual expenditures; who promises to conduct himself industriously

¹ Alb. Rec., vi, 49.

² Dunshee, p. 40.

³ O'Call. N. N., ii, 161, 162.

⁴ O'Call. N. N., ii, 567. Brodhead, p. 538.

⁵ Dunshee, p. 37.

⁶ Alb. Rec., x, 6.

and faithfully, pursuant to the instructions already given, or hereafter to be given.

Done in Am., N. N., 23 March, 1655.

(Signed)

NICASIUS DE SILLE,
LA MONTAGNE.¹

Mr. Dunshee enumerates Verstius as the third, Montagne as the fourth, and Hoboocken as the fifth of the official schoolmasters in New Amsterdam (p. 51).

The following entry occurs on the Council minutes for Aug. 11, 1655 :

A petition being read of Harman van Hoboocken, now the chorister in this city, soliciting, as he is burthened with a wife and four small children, without possessing any means for their sustenance, that his salary may be paid to him monthly, or, at least, quarterly, so is, after deliberation, given as apostil as long as the supplicant remains in service, he may depend on the punctual payment of his salary.²

The records of the burgomasters and schepens of New Amsterdam, for Feb. 21, 1656, contain this minute :

The schout having exhibited, in conformity to instructions from the Hon^{ble} Director General and Council, the request of the schoolmaster, Harman van Hoboocken, in court, they endorse—

Said schoolmaster shall communicate to the burgomasters and schepens what he is allowed by each child per quarter, pursuant to instructions from the Lord General and Council, which being done, further order shall be taken on petitioner's request.³

In 1656, the first survey of the city was made, and it was ascertained to possess 120 houses and 1,000 souls ; and "the number of children at the public school having greatly increased, further accommodation was allowed to Hoboocken, the schoolmaster."⁴ His school-house having been burned partly down,⁵ he addressed the following application to the city magistrates :

To the Hon^{ble} Lords, Burgomasters and Schepens of the city of New Amsterdam :

Harmen van Hoboken, schoolmaster of this city, respectfully requests that your Honours, would be pleased to grant him the Hall and the side room for the use of the school and as a dwelling, inasmuch as he, the petitioner, does not know how to manage for the proper accommodation of the children during winter, for they much require a place adapted for fire, and to be warmed, for which their present tenement is wholly unfit. He, the petitioner, burthened with

¹ Dunshee, p. 37. Alb. Rec., x, 29, 30 ; xxv, 133.

² Alb. Rec., x, 81.

³ N. Amst. Rec., ii, 357.

⁴ O'Call. N. N., ii, 540. Brod., p. 623.

⁵ Paulding's N. Amst., p. 40.

a wife and children, is greatly in need of a dwelling for them; and . . . he anticipates great inconvenience, not knowing how to manage for the accommodation of the school children; and if your Hon^r cannot find any, he, the petitioner, requests your Hon^{rs} to be pleased to allow him the rent of the back room which Geurt Coerten at present occupies, which he, pet^r, would freely accept for the present, as he is unable to pay so heavy a rent as a whole house amounts to.

He therefore applies to your Honors, expecting hereupon your Honors favorable endorsement. Was subscribed,

Your Hon^{rs} servant,

HARM. VAN HOBOKEN.

Dated 4 Nov. 1656. -

[*Endorsement.*]

Whereas the City Hall of this city, the hall and little room whereof the petitioner now requests for a school and dwelling, is not at present in repair, and is, moreover, required for other purposes, the same cannot be allowed him, but in order that the youth, who are here quite numerous, may have the means of instruction as far as possible, and as the circumstances of the city permit, the petitioner, for want of other lodgings, is allowed to rent the said house for a school, for which one hundred guilders shall be paid him yearly on a^o of the city, for the present and until further order. Done in Court, this 4 Nov., 1656, at Amsterdam in New Netherland.¹

From the following statement it would seem that the rebuilding of the schoolhouse was indefinitely postponed:

The burning of the schoolhouse while the youth were "doing so uncommon well," led to the revival of the question of procuring a suitable edifice; and the magistrates of the city, writing the 7th of the following November to the West India Company, "assert that the only revenue to the city was that arising from the excise of wines and beers, and that this was needed for immediate expenses in repairing the city wall, the schoeyinge, the city hall, the watch apartments, the building of the schoolhouse, and for several other improvements, and ask thereon the advice of the company."² It is not known what answer was returned to this application, but one thing is certain, the condition of the city finances was such, "the old debt made in the time of the English troubles being yet unliquidated," that the schoolhouse was not built.³

The excise tax, above referred to, had been imposed by the Director-General and Council as early as 1644,⁴ and again in 1647, to provide means to carry on the public service. In 1653, the proceeds of the excise being inadequate, the city of New Amsterdam, which during the preceding year had been invested with municipal privi-

¹ N. Amst. Rec., ii, 640, 641.

² In the same letter "the building of schools" is mentioned, in describing "what is most urgent."

³ Dunshee, p. 42. N. Amst. Rec., ii, 637, 638.

⁴ Brod. N. Y., p. 394.

leges, was called upon to redeem certain pledges made by the Burgomasters, which they agreed to fulfill, provided the entire proceeds of the excise were relinquished to them.¹ After a long dispute a compromise was made, the Burgomasters proposing to support, at the expense of the city, the following, among others :

Of the Ecclesiastique.

One of the Ministers ;

One precentor, being at the same time schoolmaster ;

One Dog-whipper. (N. B. Now called sexton.)²

This seems to have been the first municipal provision for the support of schools in the colony. It proved, however, to be merely nominal ; and as neither the clergymen, the schoolmaster, nor the sexton were paid, the Director and Council reclaimed the excise in 1654, and farmed it out, paying from the proceeds a part, at least, of the salaries then due.³

About the same time (1654), municipal privileges were granted to the Dutch towns on Long Island, and a superior District Court was organized, with general authority to regulate roads, build churches, establish schools, and make local laws, subject to the approval of the Provincial government. This arrangement continued until 1661,⁴ though we as yet find no evidence that any of the local schools hereafter mentioned were thus established.

The condition of education, in 1657, is set forth in the following communication in regard to the state of the churches in New Netherland, addressed to the Classis in Amsterdam :

* * * * *

So it stands in this province with our churches. It is to be added that (to our knowledge) not one of all these places, whether Dutch or English villages, hath a schoolmaster, except the Manhattans, Beverwyck, and now one also at Fort Casmir on the South river ; and though some parents would give their children some instruction, yet they experience much difficulty, and nothing else is to be expected than a ruined youth and a bewilderment of men's minds. Scarcely any means can be seen to remedy this evil : 1, because some villages are only in their first establishment, and whilst people come naked and poor from Holland, they have not means to provide a minister and schoolmaster : 2, because there are few qualified persons in this country who can or will teach. * * * *

At Amsterdam, in N. Netherland.

August 5, 1657.

JOH. MEGAPOLENSIS.

SAMUEL DRISIUS.⁵

¹ O'Call. N. N., ii, 23, 255.

² Brod. N. Y., 580. O'Call. N. N., ii, 271.

³ Valentine's Man., 1848, p. 378.

⁴ N. Y. Doc. Hist., iii, 71 (4^o ed.), 107 (8^o ed).

⁵ O'Call. N. N., ii, 298. Brod. N. Y., p. 590.

While the official schoolmasters were remunerated from the Government funds, we find Adriaen van Ilpendam, and others, instituting law suits against individuals, for the payment of tuition, in beavers and shillings.¹

The currency of New Amsterdam was in general composed of Indian money, called wampum or seawant, and of the skins of animals, principally of the beaver.

The seawant gradually depreciated in value, so that in 1659, sixteen guilders in seawant, at the stated rate of value, were required in exchange for one beaver, of eight guilders value; about three dollars each.²

The following is a copy of the court record in regard to two suits brought by Ilpendam :

Ordinary Sessions in Fort Orange,
1 Sept., 1660.

Adriaen van Ilpendam, plaintiff, *vs.* Gillis Pietersen, def.

The plaintiff demands of the defendant payment of ten and a half beaver and two shillings, for school money.

The defendant acknowledges the debt.

The court condemns the defendant to pay the plaintiff the demanded beavers, and this within six weeks.

Adriaen van Ilpendam, plaintiff, *vs.* Peter Lockerman, def.

The plaintiff demands payment of two beavers for one year's school money.

The defendant acknowledges the debt.

The court condemns the defendant [as above].³

The earliest observed mention of Evert Pietersen, the sixth regular schoolmaster in New Amsterdam, occurs in the following quotation :

Extract from the letter of Evert Pietersen, comforter of the sick, and schoolmaster in the Colonie established by this city, Amsterdam, on the South [Delaware] River, in New Netherland, dated 10th August, 1657 :

We arrived here at the South River, on the 25th April, and found 20 families there, mostly Swedes, not more than 5 or 6 families belonging to our nation.

* * * * * *

I already begin to keep school, and have 25 children, etc.

* * * * * *

EVERT PIETERSEN.⁴

During the winter of 1658-59, the colony at New Amstel, on the Delaware, experienced great distress, so that in a few months, famine,

¹ Dunshee, p. 39.

² Paulding, pp. 28, 30, 31.

³ Alb. Rec., vi, 295.

⁴ N. Y. Col. Doc., ii, 17.

sickness and desertion had reduced the population to less than thirty families. Several of those who left the colony came to New Amsterdam, among whom was Evert Pietersen, who from the first had been their schoolmaster. Here, according to Mr. Dunshee, he was employed by the Director General, either as a colleague with Hoboocken, or as his *locum tenens*, while he was disqualified from teaching by sickness. It appears, however, from the action of the city officials, and from an "Order in Council," which Mr. Dunshee quotes at length, that he was superseded by Pietersen, and was subsequently employed in Stuyvesant's "bouwery" as far north as Twelfth street, Pietersen's school being at the south end of the island.¹

FRIDAY AFTERNOON, 16 January, 1660: In the City Hall.

Mr. Hermen van Hoboocke requests by petition that he may receive an allowance from the city, as he is behindhand with the building of the school, and for divers other reasons set forth in the petition; on which petition is apostilled:

Petitioner is allowed to receive his current year's salary, which shall be paid him at a more convenient season, on an order of the burgomasters on the Heer Treasurer, and his allowance is henceforth abolished.²

The following is the "Order in Council" above referred to, dated Oct. 27, 1661:

Whereas, Harman van Hoboocken, before schoolmaster and chorister, was removed because another was sent to replace him [Pietersen], by the Lords Directors and the Consistory, solicits to be employed again in one or other manner in the Company's service, so is he engaged as *Adelborst* [signifying a sergeant or something above a common soldier], and allowed 10 guilders per month and 175*g.* for board, from 27th Oct., 1661.

Nota: Whereas the aforesaid Harman is a person of irreproachable life and conduct, so shall he be employed on the bouwery of the Director General as schoolmaster and clerk* [voorleser], with this condition, that the Director General, whenever his service might be wanted for the Company as adelborst, shall replace him by another expert person.³

From this date, until after the capitulation, there were two schools under the care of the Consistory; Pietersen's, at or near Fort Amsterdam, and Hoboocken's, on the Bouwery.⁴

The period of Pietersen's engagement is not definitely known; but on his return to Holland he petitioned the West India Company for

¹ Dunshee, pp. 45, 47.

² N. Amst. Rec., iii, 407, 408.

* Alb. Rec., xix, 383.

⁴ Dunshee, p. 47.

a permanent engagement, the Director General and magistrates recommending his reappointment.¹

The Directors of the Company wrote to Stuyvesant, December 24, 1660:

We will consider the petition of Mr. Evert Pietersen, late school-master and chorister in the colonie of the city, to be employed again in the Company's service, and return thither with his wife, and enquire here about his character, conduct and abilities, when we shall communicate the result to your Honour.²

Subsequently, the following letter, dated May 2, 1661, was received by Governor Stuyvesant:

The Directors of the West India Company, Department of Amsterdam, to the honorable, prudent, beloved, trusty Petrus Stuyvesant, Director General and Council, make known:

Whereas, we have deemed it necessary to promote religious worship, and to read to the inhabitants the word of God, to exhort them, to lead them in the ways of the Lord, and console the sick, that an expert person was sent to New Netherland, in the city of New Amsterdam, who at the same time should act there as chorister and schoolmaster; so it is, that we, upon the good report which we have received about the person of *Evert Pietersen*, and confiding in his abilities and experience in the aforesaid services, together on his pious character and virtues, have, on your Honor's recommendation, and that of the magistrates of the city of New Amsterdam, appointed the aforesaid person as consoler of the sick, chorister and schoolmaster, at New Amsterdam, in New Netherland, which charge he shall fulfil there, and conduct himself in these with all diligence and faithfulness; also we expect that he shall give others a good example, so as it becomes a pious and good consoler, clerk, chorister and schoolmaster; regulating himself in conformity to the instructions which he received here from the Consistory, and principally to the instructions which he received from us, which he shall execute in every point faithfully: Wherefore, we command all persons, without distinction, to acknowledge the aforesaid Evert Pietersen as consoler, clerk, chorister and schoolmaster in New Amsterdam, in New Netherland, and not to molest, disturb or ridicule him in any of these offices, but rather to offer him every assistance in their power, and deliver him from every painful sensation, by which the will of the Lord and our good intentions shall be accomplished.

Done by the Department of Amsterdam, on the 2d of May, XVIc and sixty-one.

(Signed)

ABRAM WILMERDONCX.

By order of the above,

C. VAN SEVENTER.³

¹ Dunshee, p. 48. O'Call. N. N., ii, 374, 388. Brod. N. Y., 652, 653.

² Alb. Rec., iv, 364.

³ Alb. Rec., viii, 321. Dunshee, p. 44.

In a few days, another letter from the same source, dated May 9th, 1661, was received, in which Pietersen's salary is fixed, and instructions given with respect to the books he would need as *krankbesoecker* (comforter of the sick):¹

Honorable, prudent, beloved Faithful:

* * * * *

We have engaged, on your Honor's recommendation and that of the magistrates of the city of New Amsterdam, Mr. Evert Pietersen as schoolmaster and clerk, upon a salary of *g*36 per month [\$15], and *g*125 [\$52+] annually for his board, who is now embarked in the ship *The Gilded Beaver*,² but not with his wife, whose indisposition, as he said, prevented her departure. And whereas, he solicited to be supplied with some books and stationery, which would be of service to him in that station, so did we resolve to send you a sufficient quantity of these articles, as your Honor may see from the invoice. Your Honor ought not to place all these at his disposal at once, but from time to time, when he may be in want of these, when his account ought directly to be charged with its amount; so, too, he must be charged with all such books of which he may be in want as a consoler of the sick, which he might have obtained from your Honor, which afterward might be reimbursed to him, whenever he, ceasing to serve in that capacity, might return these; all these must be valued at the invoice price.³

This correspondence establishes Evert Pietersen as the sixth schoolmaster of the Reformed Dutch Church school.⁴

The requirement that all teachers be licensed, seems to have been duly observed and enforced, as appears by the following extracts from the Council minutes and the New Amsterdam Records:

Andreas Hudde appeared before the Director General and Council, and solicited a license to keep school, received for answer that the Council shall ask upon his proposal the opinion of the Minister and the Consistory. Done in New Amsterdam, 31 December, 1665.⁵

On motion—The Attorney-General is commanded, to go to the house of Jacob Van Corler, who has, since some time, arrogated to himself to keep school, and to warn him that Director General and Council have deemed it proper to send him a *supersedeas*, till he shall have solicited and obtained from the Director General and Council an act in *propria forma*. 19 February, 1658.⁶

To the Rt. Hon^{ble} Lords the Lord Director Genl. and Lords Councillors of N. Netherland:

Right Hon^{ble} Lords—The burgomasters and schepens of the city of Amsterdam, in N. Netherland, represent with all respect, that some burghers and inhabitants of the abovenamed city have presented

¹ Dunshee, p. 44.

² N. Y. Doc. Hist., iii, 37 (4^o ed.), 58 (8^o ed.)

³ Alb. Rec., iv, 373.

⁴ Dunshee, p. 45.

⁵ Alb. Rec., ix, 309.

⁶ Alb. Rec., xiv, 114.

a certain petition to this Court, whereof a copy is hereunto annexed, remonstrating that your Honours were pleased to notify Jacob van Corlaar, through the Heer Fiscal Nicasius de Silles, not to keep any school; and as they, the petit^{ns}, find themselves greatly interested thereby, as their children had forgot what the above named Jacob van Corlaar had to their great satisfaction previously taught them in reading, writing and cyphering, which was much more than any other person, no one excepted; therefore they request that the above named Corlaar may be allowed again to keep school; and although the above named burgomasters and two schepens have spoken verbally thereon to your Hon^{rs}, and your Hon^{rs} were not pleased to allow it, for reasons thereunto moving your Hon^{rs}, they therefore, in consequence of the humble supplication of the burghers and inhabitants aforesaid, again request that your Hon^{rs} may be pleased to permit the above named Corlaar again to keep school, which doing, we remain your Hon^{rs} subjects. The Burgomasters and Schepens.

In Amsterdam, in N. Netherland, the 5th March, 1658.

By order of the Burgom^{rs} and Schepens of the city aforesaid.

JOANNES NEVIUS, Sec'y.¹

In Council, 19 March [1658].

Presented a petition of burgomasters and schepens of this city, soliciting, that Jacob Van Corlear, who, on the 19 February last, was interdicted by the Director General and Council to keep school, might be permitted it in the city. The apostill was—

School-keeping and the appointment of schoolmasters depend absolutely from the *jus Patronatus* in virtue of which Director General and Council interdicted school-keeping to Jacob Van Corlear, as having arrogated it to himself without their orders, in which resolution they do as yet persist.²

Being presented a petition of Jacobus Van Corler, soliciting the permission to keep school within this city, and to instruct children in reading and writing.

For weighty reasons influencing the Director General and Council, the apostill was *nihil actum*. 26 March, 1658.³

A petition being presented of Jan Lubberts, soliciting, that he might be permitted to keep school, to instruct in reading, writing and arithmetic:

The apostill was:

The petition is granted, provided he conducts himself as such a person ought to do. 30 July, 1658.⁴

To the Hon. Respectful, Valiant Director General and Council in N. N.:

Shows with all due and submissive reverence Jan Juriense Becker—your supplicant, that he, through the caprices of the unsteady For-

¹ N. Amst. Rec., iii, 87, 88.

² Alb. Rec., xiv, 151.

³ Alb. Rec., xiv, 158.

⁴ Alb. Rec., xiv, 318.

tune—since a short time—not knowing why—has been compelled to become a tavern-keeper—for which he nearly sacrificed all what he possessed—and whereas, the supplicant is apprehensive that many difficulties, and even poverty is threatening him and his family—So is it, that the supplicant, imploring addresses himself to your Hon., soliciting most humbly, that it may please your Hon. to regard with pity the supplicant, being an old Company's servant, and to employ him as a writer in the service of the Company, either in the Esopus—here or anywhere else, where ever your Hon. might deem it proper—or—if your Hon. cannot employ him at this time in their service—that then the supplicant might be permitted to keep school, to instruct the youth in reading and writing, etc. Expecting a favorable apostill, he remains

Your Hon. obedient ser't,

J. BECKER.

Done in Amsterdam, in N. Netherland, 15 Aug., 1660.

The apostill was: *Fiat*—the keeping of a school. 16 August [1660].¹

To the Noble, great and Respected the Director General and Council in N. Netherland:

Shows reverently, Johannes Van Gelder, a citizen and inhabitant of this city, how that he, supplicant—being tolerably well acquainted with reading and writing, it has happened that several of the principal inhabitants of this city advised and encouraged him too—to open a public school, and consequently induced the supplicant—who looks out for a living in an honorable way—to adopt their advice—in the hope that he shall execute this task to their satisfaction who shall make use of his service—but as this is not permitted, except that an admission is previously obtained, so he addresses himself to your Hon's, requesting their admission for this exercise—viz—keeping a public school—which doing, etc.

Your Honors' subject and servant,

JOHANNES VAN GELDER.

The apostill was: *Fiat, quod petitur*. 21 September, 1662.²

The foundation of the first academy and classical school, in the city of New Amsterdam, has been ascribed³ to a representation transmitted to Holland, Sept. 19, 1658, as part of a petition of the burgo-masters and schepens to the West India Company, a copy of which is hereafter given. We find, however, an earlier document on this subject, as follows:

The Directors of the West India Company to the Director General.
20 May, 1658:

* * * * *

The Rev. Driesius mentioned to us more than once that it might, in his opinion, be serviceable if a Latin school was established, in

¹ Alb. Rec., xxiv, 374, 375.

² Alb. Rec., xx, 215.

³ Paulding's N. Amst., 41. Dunshee, 52.

which the youth might be instructed—in which he was willing to engage his service; and whereas, we do not disapprove this plan, so we thought its communication proper, that your Hon., if you considered it proper to make an experiment of such an establishment, might advise us in what manner such an institution might be carried into effect to the greatest advantage for the community, and with the least expense to the Company.¹

The representation of the burgomasters and schepens, above referred to, dated Sept. 19, 1658, was in the following words:

Right Hon^{ble}, Wise, Prudent Lords and Patroons and Commissaries
of N. Netherland:

* * * * *

Further, laying before your Hon^{rs} the great augmentation of the youth in the Province and place, which yearly increases more and more, and finds itself now very numerous, and though many of them can read and write, the burghers and inhabitants are nevertheless inclined to have their children instructed in the most useful languages, the chief of which is the Latin tongue; and as there are no means to do so here, the nearest being at Boston, in N. England, a great distance from here, and many of the burghers and inhabitants of this place and neighborhood having neither the ability nor means to send their children thither, we shall therefore again trouble your Hon^{rs}, and humbly request that your Hon^{rs} would be pleased to send us a suitable person for master of a Latin school, in order that our children may be instructed in, and study such language, not doubting but were such person here, many of the neighboring places would send their children hither to be instructed in that tongue; hoping that, increasing from year to year, it may finally attain to an Academy, whereby this place, arriving at great splendour, your Hon^{rs} shall have the reward and praise, next to God the Lord who will grant his blessing to it. On your Hon^{rs} sending us a schoolmaster, we shall endeavor to have constructed a suitable place or school.²

The engagement of Alexander Carolus Curtius, as the first teacher of the Latin school, is recorded in the following extract from the Register of Resolutions of the Directors of the West Indian Company Department of Amsterdam, as communicated to the officials of New Amsterdam:

THURSDAY the 10 April, 1659.

Appeared before the Directors, Alexander Carolus Curtius, before a Professor in Lithuania, of whom mention is made in former minutes, who made an offer of his services, on which it was resolved to engage him as schoolmaster in the Latin language, in New Netherland, on a salary of $\text{f}500$ annually, of which shall be advanced to him a fourth, to provide himself with the necessary books, and moreover he was presented by the Directors with one hundred guilders, which

¹ Alb. Rec., iv, 268.

² Paulding's N. Amst., 41, 42. Dunshee, p. 52. N. Amst. Rec., iii, 233.

he may employ in merchandise to be of service to him at his arrival in N. Netherland.

When he arrives there, a proper spot for a garden and orchard shall be given him by the Director General, while he is further permitted to give private instruction, if it does not interfere with the office which he has accepted.¹

The Directors wrote to the Director General, under date of April 25, 1659 :

Our earnest exertions to provide your city with a Latin schoolmaster shall, we expect, be placed beyond doubt by the arrival of Alexander Carolus Curtius, who was before a Professor in Lithuania, whom we have engaged for this purpose, allowing him an annual salary of *f*500, . . . boarding included, besides one hundred more as a gift, to purchase merchandise, of which he may dispose to his advantage at his arrival, as you will see from the enclosed extract of our resolutions, and the copy of our contract with him.

* * * * *

The books which the schoolmaster required to instruct the youth in the Latin language, will not be made ready from the unexpected departure of the vessels, wherefore this must be postponed to the next opportunity.²

The Latin schoolmaster was present at a meeting of the burgo-masters in the City Hall, Friday, July 4, 1659 :

Alexander Carolus Curtius appears in Court, who is informed that *f*200 are allowed him as a yearly present from the city ; an order on the Treasurer is also handed him for *f*50 over and above, which he thankfully accepts ; but requests, as he has but few scholars as yet, that his salary may be somewhat increased, as the beginning entails great expense, saying, whenever he gets 25 to 30 children to the school, he shall serve for less salary ; but refers it to the discretion of the No : Magistrates.³

The arrival of the Latin schoolmaster is also mentioned in a letter from Stuyvesant and the Council, to the Directors, dated July 23, 1659 :

The person of Alexander Carolus Curtius, whom your Hon. engaged to instruct in the Latin language, arrived here. We hope and confide that the community shall reap great benefits from it for their children, for which we pray that a bountiful God may vouchsafe his blessing. The state of this new institution shall be ere long communicated to your Hon.⁴

The Directors wrote Stuyvesant, December 22, 1659 :*

The complaints which have been made by the Latin schoolmaster or rector shall, in our opinion, in great part be removed. Now

¹ Alb. Rec., viii, 201, 202.

² Alb. Rec., iv, 303, 305.

³ N. Amst. Rec., iii, 378. Paulding's N. Amst., p. 42.

⁴ Alb. Rec., xviii, 19, 20.

henceforward the payment is made according to the value of Holland currency. If to this sum is added that which he receives from his pupils annually, then it would seem to be adequate for the sustenance of a single individual—more so—as his salary from time to time must be increased by the increase of the youth whose parents cannot decently neglect to reward his endeavors which he bestows on the instruction of their children. In this your Hon. ought to assist him, and recommend him to the parents, as the circumstances of time may permit.¹

The following is an extract from a letter of William Beeckman, at that time Vice-Director of the colony on Delaware river, to Director General Stuyvesant, dated New Amstel, March 15, 1660:

Noble, Honorable, Respectful, Wise and very Prudent Sir:

* * * * *

I kindly solicit that your Hon. will permit me—when an opportunity is offered—to visit the Mannhattans in May or June. I intend to bring my two oldest boys to school.² * * *

It is presumed that Mr. Beeckman here refers to the Latin school under consideration.

That Professor Curtius was also a physician, appears from the following extract of a letter from the Directors to Stuyvesant, dated April 16, 1660:

As we have been informed that Rector Curtius is practising physic, and did solicit that we would provide him with an *Herbarium*, which would be to him of great service, so we send him this book by the present opportunity, which your Honour will deliver to him—but the book ought to remain the property of the Company—so, too, the books which have been lately transmitted. Your Honour ought to make a memorandum of all these articles, so that it may not be forgotten.³

Rector Curtius seems not, however, to have justified the anticipations formed in regard to himself and the school. He soon became involved in a petty, but protracted and unsuccessful lawsuit, as appears from the following curious records of the Burgomasters' Court, commencing Jan. 13, 1660:

Capt. Jan Jacob, plff. *vs.* Alexander Carolus Curtius, def. and Daniel Tourneur, def. Alexander default. Plff. demands benefit of the default.

Daniel Tourneur appearing, declares to have sold a hog for Capt. Jacob to Alexander Carolus Curtius, for five beavers, and having recd the hog, therefor saying and promising to give two beavers down, and the remaining three at the end of the month.

¹ Alb. Rec., iv, 325.

² Alb. Rec., xvii, 43.

³ Alb. Rec., iv, 341, 342.

Capt. Jacob says he hath attached the Galiot [hog?], requesting that the attachment be declared valid.

The W : Court declare the attachment valid.¹

20 Jan. 1660.

Jan Jacobsen, plfff. *vs.* Alexander Carolus Curtius, def.

Plfff demands from def. five beavers for a hog, according to evidence of Daniel Tourneur, and the costs accrued thereon.

Def. offers an exception as not being amenable before this Court, but before the Director General and Council; says he purchased a hog for two beavers and two blankets, and can prove so by Jan Schriver, who, being called in, appears and declares that Dome. Rector commissioned him to buy a hog for two blankets and two beavers, and says that Daniel Tourneur, as authorized by Jan Jacobz., told him that Dome. Rector should have the hog for two beavers and two blankets.

The W : Court order parties on both sides to summon their witnesses against the next Court, to confront them with each other.²

11 Feb., 1660.

Alexander Carolus Curtius appears in Court, requests that his witnesses may be heard relative to the hogs in dispute with Capt. Jacob.

Jan Schryver appears as witness in Court, who is informed that the Rector calls on him; whereupon he declares that the hog in question was bought for two beavers and two blankets; offering to confirm the same on oath.

And whereas, Capt. Jacob's witness has not been heard, Capt. Jacob is ordered to summon Daniel Tourneur at the next Court day.³

17 Feb., 1660.

Daniel Tourneur and Jan Schryver appearing in Court, are asked about the sale of the hog which took place between Capt. Jacob and the Rector Alexander Carolus Curtius.

Daniel Tourneur declares that, after many words of praising and bidding, the hog was sold to Dome. Rector for five beavers, saying that Capt. Jacob would not sell that hog less than five beavers, which was told to the Rector; to which the Rector answered, saying, in God's name he had but two beavers, and he must wait for the other three; to which Capt. Jacob would hardly agree; finally, through the mediation of Joannus Meulen, he let himself be persuaded; offering to confirm the same on oath.

The W : Court gave the parties eight days respite to recollect themselves, and if they have any proof, to bring it also in.⁴

1 June, 1660. Deft [Curtius] default.

24 August, 1660.

Capt. Jan Jacobzen, plfff., *vs.* Alexander Carolus Curtius, deft, and Danl. Tourneur as witness. Deft default.

Plfff produces certain written declaration of Daniel Tourneur relative to the sale of the hogs in question, which the plfff sold to

¹ N. Amst. Rec., iv, 186.

² N. Amst. Rec., iv, 148.

³ N. Amst. Rec., iv, 182.

⁴ N. Amst. Rec., iv, 190, 191.



the debt, declaring, under offer of oath, that the same were sold for five beavers; and whereas Jan Schryver is also acquainted with the purchase, he was ordered to be called, who, appearing, declares under offer of oath, that the sale was for two beavers and two coverlets; and whereas both these offer to confirm their declaration by oath, the W: Court tendered the oath to Daniel Tournour, who, having taken the same, the debt was condemned to pay the plaintiff the five beavers which he promised to pay for the hogs in question.¹

7 Sept., 1660.

Alexander Carolus Curtius appears in Court, acknowledging to have received the judgment pronounced against him in the matter between him and Capt. Jan Jacobz, saying for this time he submits to the same.²

Curtius was likewise at variance with the magistrates, as is indicated by the following:

Extract from the Register of Resolutions adopted by the Hon^{ble} Lord Director Genl. and Council of New Netherland, on Tuesday, 25th May, a^o. 1660.

* * * * *

Whereas the Hon^{ble} Lord Director General and Burgomasters have last year allowed and ordained the Heer Rector Carolus Curtius to take six guilders per quarter, school money, for each boy, and Burgomaster had, on these conditions, allowed him a yearly salary from this city of two hundred guilders; and whereas it has come to the burgomasters' ears, that the Heer Rector, of his own pleasure, takes one beaver per quarter from each boy, which is contrary to the order, burgomasters do therefore hereby give him warning and notice not to take any more than what is fixed upon by the Hon^{ble} Lord Director General and burgomasters, or through neglect thereof burgomasters shall retain his yearly stipend which the Hr. Rector receives from this city, and he shall receive no further allowance from this city. Done Amsterdam, in N. Netherland, the 9th August, 1660.³

12 July, 1661.

Alexander Carolus Curtius communicates in writing the offer of his services, if this city will contribute to him six hundred guilders a year in beavers, on condition of receiving no contribution from the youth. Whereupon serves as marginal order:

Burgomasters and schepens refer the petition to the Rt. Hon^{ble} Lord Director General and Council of New Netherland.⁴

Still further, he was unpopular with his patrons:

The parents complained of the want of proper discipline among his pupils, "who beat each other and tore the clothes from each other's backs." He retorted by saying, "his hands were tied, as some of the parents forbade him punishing their children." The

¹ N. Amst. Rec., iv, 295, 296.

² N. Amst. Rec., iv, 315.

³ N. Amst. Rec., iii, 427, 428.

⁴ N. Amst. Rec., iv, 565.

result was, the school changed rectors. Doctor Curtius returned to Holland, and the Rev. Ægidius Luyck, who had been brought over specially to superintend the education of the Director General's sons, became principal of the High School.¹ * * * *

Director Stuyvesant wrote to the Directors of the West India Company at Amsterdam, July 21, 1661:

* * * * *
What Alexander Carolus Curtius, the Rector or Latin schoolmaster, dismissed by your Honors, has remonstrated and requested of us on his departure, your Honors can deduce from his annexed petition.²
* * * *

No copy of this petition of Curtius seems to have been preserved, nor do we find any later record concerning him.

We are not aware that any town on Long Island had a school at an earlier date than the one established at Midwout, now Flatbush.

A lot for a village schoolhouse was set apart by an

Ordinance of the Director General and Council of New Netherland, authorizing the laying out of the village of Midwout. Passed 16 October, 1655.

* * * * *
We, therefore, do hereby authorize said magistrates, *Stryker, Hegeman* and *Swartwout*, to lay out the aforesaid village according to the exhibited plan; provided that 5 or 6 lots be reserved for public buildings, such as for the Sheriff, the Minister, the Secretary, Schoolmaster, Village Tavern and public Court House.
* * * *

Done in the Assembly of the Hon^{ble} Director General and Council of *New Netherland*, holden in *Fort Amsterdam*. Dated as above.³

The following document seems to refer to some of the aforesaid lots:

To the Hon. Petrus Stuyvesant, and Members of Council in New Netherland:

Remonstrate with all humility and due reverence the schepens of the Court in Midwout—how that they, remonstrants, often have petitioned how necessary and how beneficial the four church lots would be to the village Midwout and its inhabitants, and how much it would relieve the burthens of the inhabitants—when it pleased your Hon. at length to give for an apostill—that further written information was required—and in what manner it was intended that the aforesaid church lots were to be administered.

Whereon we think it proper to communicate farther the following information to your Hon., and to explain this somewhat farther. It

¹ Dunshee, p. 53. O'Call. N. N., ii, 546. Brod., p. 694.

² N. Y. Col. MSS., xiv, 296 (as translated by Dr. O'Callaghan).

³ O'Call. Laws of N. N., p. 199. N. Y. Col. MSS., vi, 106.

should seem to us—with submission to your Hon. better judgment, that the best means were, by which the prosperity of the village of Midwout and its inhabitants would be most efficaciously promoted—as we will take the liberty to explain more at large.

First, that 25 morgen¹—situated to the east—with its appendages—might be employed to repair the church and keep it in a decent order—this is lying to the east of the plain and south of the road.

Secondly, the other 25 morgen—lying too at the east side of the market, and at the north side of the road, with its appurtenances and privileges, to the maintenance of a school, church service, etc., which, if it is approved and consented by your Honours, shall be employed for these purposes.

* * * * *

(Signed) JAN STRYCKER,
ADRIAEN HEGEMAN,
WILLEM JACOBSE VAN BOEREM.

By order of the Schepens of Midwout aforesaid.

PIETER TONNEMAN, *Secret. pro tem.*

On this petition being read and considered, the following apostill was given :

The two first points, with regard to the lots, are granted to the supplicants so as they are favored with these, for those beneficial purposes, as were explained by the supplicants.

* * * * *

Done in the meeting of the Director General and Council, in Fort Amsterdam, in New Netherland, on the 29 January, 1658.²

That a school was actually established in Midwout as early as 1659, appears from the following paragraph :

The early Dutch settlers . . . took measures for the education of their children, and the maintenance of suitable schools. Among the first records of the town, we find notice of the employment of a schoolmaster. Much care seems to have been taken, not only in the selection, but in the agreements formed with the teachers of their children. The first schoolmaster of whom we have any knowledge, was Adrian Hegeman, . . . one of the original proprietors of the town. . . . He was the ancestor . . . probably of the whole family of Hegemans, now living. He was engaged as schoolmaster from 1659 to 1671.

From the records of the town, it appears that the schoolmaster acted as town clerk ; and as the rates of tuition were low, previously to the American revolution, the offices of sexton, and "foresinger," or chorister, of the church, were conferred upon him with a view to increase his emoluments.³

* * * * *

The same author gives further information relative to more recent periods, which we reserve for future articles.

¹ A morgen was about two acres.

² Alb. Rec., xiv, 73, 74, 75.

³ Strong's Hist. of Flatbush, pp. 108, 109.

The following document refers to a schoolmaster not mentioned in Strong's History of Flatbush :

To the Director General and Council in N. Netherland :

We, the subscribers, remonstrate with submission—that we thankfully received from our church a subsidy to the amount of $f^{415:10}$, but there remain yet in arrears by Mr. Jacob N., surgeon.... f^{77}
 by our schoolmaster, Reinier..... 32
 and yet by one barquier, Sander N..... 81

together f^{190}
 which we had flattered ourselves to pay of the remnants—it is, however, so, that by want of payment, we must remain in want. So that we are again compelled to address your Hons. and reverently to solicit that we may be relieved from it. Which doing, etc. 29
 March, 1661. Midwout. In the name of our whole congregation.

JOH. THEO. POLHEMIUS,
 JAN STRYCKER.

The following apostill was given : As soon [as] the state of the treasury shall permit it—then to the supplicant shall by the Company, in behalf of the church, be paid the half of the aforesaid sum by the Receiver.¹

The second school on Long Island of which we find any record, was established at the English settlement called Middleburg, now Newtown.

After the death of Rev. John Moore, minister of Middleburg, in 1657, his family were left in quiet possession of the townhouse, the only public building in the place, and which served, as occasion required, the several purposes of a church, schoolhouse and parsonage. After the lapse of four and one-half years, during which period the town had been destitute of the public means of grace, the deficiency was to be in part supplied by the services of a schoolmaster, and it was expected that Mr. Doughty, who had married the widow of Mr. Moore, would surrender the premises for the use of the new teacher. He, however, objected to this, which gave rise to the following curious memorial, the original of which is in English, and illustrates the antique handwriting and orthography of that period :²

To the Hon. Lord Stuyvesant, Lord General off the New Netherlands, the humble petition of your Lordship's petitioners :

That whearas God hath beene pleased off laet years to deprive us of Middleburrow, of Long Island, off the publyck meanes of grace & salvation, and also of education of our children, in scholasticall discipline, the way to true happinesse, but yet God in mercy of laet

¹ Alb. Rec., xix, 95.

² Riker's Annals of Newtown, pp. 46, 49, 52.

hath provided for us a helpe meete for the disciplyne of education of our children, and by the same person helpe in the Sabath exercyses, wee, therefore, who never gave nor consented to the giveinge off the howsing, and lands, buildt and fenced in, and alsoo dedicated for the use off the publyck dispensation of Gods word unto us wee humbly intreate your Honorable Lordships, that this our sayde schoolmaster, Richard Mills by name, may bee by your Lordships order possessed of the sayde housinge and lands for his use and ours alsoo, for our childrens education and the Sabaths exercyse, the which God doeth require, and we have neede for us and our children theroff; as the howsing now stands, it is licke all to goe to reecke and ruyne, the fences faelling downe, the house and barne decayinge & wanteth repayre, and Francis Dowtye doeth not repayre it, nor the towne, as it stands betweene him and them, wil not repaire it, and by this meanes is licke to come to nothing in a shorte time—and soo wee and your Lordship alsoo, by this meanes, shalle be disappointed; therfore our humble request is to your Lordshipp, is, that this our schoolmaster, and at present our soules helpe in dispencing God's word to us and our children everye Lords day, may bee setteled in it, to injoye it without any molestation, from Francis Doughty, or any of his, for soo longe time our God shall bee pleased to continue him amongst us, or to provyde another for us, thus knowinge that your Lordship is as willinge, to further our soules good as well as our bodyes—wee rest your Lordships humble petitioners & loyal subjects. Was signed,

THOMAS HUNTE,	MARY RYDER,
FRANCIS SWAYNE,	JOHN BARCKER,
JAMES BRADISH,	JOHN LAUSRIEN,
JAMES LAWRENSEN,	THOMAS CORNISH,
NICOLAS CARTER,	SAMUEL TOE.

This petition being presented to the Director General, Petrus Stuyvesant, the following apostill was given upon it:

These presence doeth requiere and order Francys Doughty, and whome it may concerne, to give and graunt a quyett possession unto the present schoolmaster, Mr. Richard Mills, off the house and land, beeinge with our knowledge consent and helpe, buildt for the publyck use off the ministry, & by that meanes it may nor cannot bee given and transported for a privaet herrytadge; provyded, if hee, either his wyfe hath, to demanda any remaynder of meanes or wages of her deceased husbände—Mr. John Moor, laet minister of the aforementioned towne—it beeinge made and by these presence doeth order the magistrates and inhabitants off the sayde towne to give unto the heys, what is due to them. *Actum* Amst. in the N. N. lands, this 18th of February, 1661. Was signed,

P. STUYVESANT.¹

In compliance with this order the premises were vacated, and Mr. Richard Mills, the first schoolmaster of Middleburg, entered upon the duties of his vocation.²

¹ N. Y. Col. MSS., ix, 498, 499. Alb. Rec., xix, 13, 14. Riker's Annals, pp. 49, 50.

² Riker's Annals, p. 50.

The third of the Long Island schools seems to have been established at Brooklyn. Mr. Stiles says :

The year 1661 will also be ever memorable in the history of Breuckelen [Brooklyn] as having furnished to the good people their first *schoolmaster*. On the 4th of July, 1661, the following petition was presented :

"To the Right Hon^{ble} Director General and Council of New Netherland :

"The Schout and schepens of the Court of Breuckelen respectfully represent, that they found it necessary that a court messenger was required for the Schepens' Chamber, to be occasionally employed in the village of Breuckelen and all around where he may be needed, as well to serve summons, as also to conduct the service of the church, and to sing on Sundays ; to take charge of the school, dig graves, etc., ring the bell, and perform whatever else may be required. Therefore, the petitioners, with your Honors' approbation, have thought proper to accept for so highly necessary an office, a suitable person who is now come before them, one Carel van Beauvois, to whom they have hereby appropriated the sum of fl 150, besides a free dwelling ; and whereas, the petitioners are apprehensive that the said C. v. Beauvois would not and cannot do the work for the sum aforesaid, and the petitioners are not able to promise him any more, therefore the petitioners, with all humble and proper reverence, request your Honors to be pleased to lend them a helping hand, in order thus to receive the needful assistance. Herewith, awaiting your Honors' kind and favorable answer, and commending ourselves, honorable, wise, prudent and most discreet gentlemen, to your favor, we pray for your Honors God's protection, together with a happy and prosperous administration unto salvation. Your Honors' servants and subjects, the Schout and schepens of the village aforesaid. By order of the same.

"(Signed)

ADRIAEN HEGEMAN, *Secretary*."

In answer to this petition, the Director and Council were graciously pleased to say that they would "pay fifty guilders, in wampum, annually, for the support of the precentor (voorsanger) and schoolmaster in the village of Breuckelen."

Carel de Beauvois, who was thus commissioned to fulfill the multifarious duties of court-messenger, bell-ringer, grave-digger, chorister, reader, and schoolmaster of Breuckelen, is described by Riker as a "highly respectable and well-educated French Protestant, who came from Leyden, in Holland. . . . He arrived at Amsterdam, in the ship Otter, February 17, 1659. . . . His literary merits and acquaintance with the Dutch language soon acquired for him the situation of a teacher ;" but in 1661, as we have seen, his duties were enlarged by his appointment to the office of chorister and reader. He afterward served as public secretary or town clerk, which office he held until 1669.²

¹ N. Y. Col. MSS., ix, 678. Alb. Rec., xix, 194.

² Stiles' Hist. Brooklyn, i, 116, 117.

A movement for the building of a schoolhouse in New Amsterdam is indicated by the following petition, dated Feb. 2, 1662 :

* * * * *

To the Noble-great and Respected the Director General and Council
in N. Netherland.

Noble-great and Respected :

Shew with all due reverence to your Hon's, the burgomasters of this city, whereas they supplicants have resolved to construct a good schoolhouse for the benefit of the inhabitants of this city—for which is required a useful and proper and well situated lot—and whereas, such a lot, just behind the house and lot where Mr. Jacob Vaneranger resides—in the Brewer street—opposite the house and lot of Johannis de Peyster is existing, so is it that your supplicants solicit your Hon. that it may please them to favor them with this lot—viz—broad along the street 30 feet—and further, in depth the half of its length, to employ this gift for a similiar purpose. * * *

Expecting hereon your Hon's favorable disposition, we are and remain your Hon's humble supplicants, the burgomasters of this city Amsterdam, in N. Netherland.

By order of the same, and signed

JOANNES NEVIUS, *Secretary.*

On this petition was given for apostill :

The Director General and Council deem it, for various reasons, more proper that the schoolhouse be constructed on a part of the present church yard.¹ * * *

There is no evidence . . . that the schoolhouse was built as contemplated.²

We have already quoted a statement that Ægidius Luyck succeeded Curtius in the rectorship of the Latin school. He arrived at New Amsterdam in January, 1662, being then twenty-one years of age. The following communication shows his original purpose in coming, and why he was afterward employed in a wider sphere of instruction. "It will be borne in mind, in connection with these quotations, that the barbarous English is due to the translator of the "Albany Records" (Van der Kemp), whose eminent learning obviously did not include the familiarity with the English language requisite for a translator. As a teacher, minister and magistrate, Mr. Luyck seems to have maintained a good reputation in New Amsterdam for some twelve or more years, and it is quite reasonable to presume that his formal introduction in the following paragraphs fails to do him literary justice :

To the Noble Lord the Director General and High Council in N.
Netherland :

Shews with all humble reverence, that whereas I, undersigned, called for the private instruction of the Director General's children,

¹ Alb. Rec., xx, 39.

² Dunshee, p. 47.

sometimes have by a few inhabitants here, who saw and heard the full satisfaction—be it said without the least arrogance—of the aforesaid Hon. Lord—upon the good method of inculcating the first principles of the Latin and Greek languages, as in writing, arithmetick, catechising, and *honorum morum praxis*—with respect to his children—and even by his Hon. seriously solicited to request that I might be employed in the *Rectoratum* of this city—and his Hon. fully acquainted with the necessity of having the youth in a now rising place—and that several who in behalf of their children submitted before to troubles and expenses—under the former Doctor—now should be compelled to sacrifice all their prospects, or at a yet greater expense send their children to the *Patria*.

So his Hon. deemed it proper to employ me for this end, promising that he would advise and recommend it to the Lord Directors—so that a salary might be allowed to me.

With this looking forward I remained satisfied, returned to the school, and exerted every nerve so that the number of my disciples was increased to 20—among whom were two from Virginia and two from Fort Orange—and ten or twelve more from the two aforesaid places were expected, while other were intended to board with me.

But while I was waiting with patience for an answer from the Directors, I nevertheless did not receive it, without knowing its cause.

I offer, notwithstanding, cheerfully to continue in my service, but solicit most earnestly and humbly that the Director General, with his High and Faithful Council, that it may please them to provide me with a decent salary, so as I cannot doubt, it shall meet their approbation, as well knowing that I cannot hire on the small payment which is received from the disciples—and as a laborer deserve his wages—and if I might obtain a favorable resolution, my ardour and zeal to acquit myself well of my duty must be of course increased—by which I am encouraged to remain.

Your Hon. humble and obedient servant,

ÆGIDIUS LUYCK.

Fort Amsterdam, in N. Netherland, 30 July, 1663.

The following apostill was given by a majority of votes:

The supplicant ought first to address himself to the College of the Lords Directors of the Privileged West Indian Company, Department of Amsterdam. Done at Fort Amsterdam, in N. Netherland, 9 Aug., 1663.¹

Advise of the Director General on the request of Rev. Luyck:

My advise on the request of the Rev. Ægidius Luyck is, that I condescend to acquiesce in the majority of votes. Nevertheless, being of opinion that the instruction of the youth, with well regulated schools, is not less serviceable or less required than even church service—that the many proofs, too, of the supplicant's piety, talents and diligence in instructing children, and his more than common progresses—which have been during five quarters of a year such, that they far excel the instructions of the late rector, Alexander Carolus

¹ Alb. Rec., xxi, 257, 258.

Curtius—as will be attested by the ministers of the holy word of God, and other competent judges—to which ought to be added, that such a plan is contributing effectually to increase the renown of this place and school—and really an actual advantage, so well for our youth as for our inhabitants, as by example, the increase of the school from Virginia and elsewhere—for these and other reasons, partly already explained in that petition, it would be my advice, that aforesaid Ægidius Luyck, to encourage him in his service, ought to enjoy the quality and salary, which the Lords Directors of the Privileged West Indian Company, Department of Amsterdam, granted to the first Latin schoolmaster, Alexander Carolus Curtius. If not absolutely, at least with decent intercession and recommendation, under the aforesaid Lords Directors. Done in Fort Amsterdam, in N. Netherland, 9 Aug., 1663.¹

To the Noble, Great and Respectful the Director General and Council in N. Netherland:

Gentlemen—With due respect and gratitude embraces your Hons. supplicant the apostill and address to the noble, great and respectful Lords Directors, not doubting, your Hon. kind recommendations and intercessions shall obtain the desired effect, while in the meantime your Hons. supplicant finds himself once more compelled to address your Hons. and to remonstrate with due respect, that what your Hon. prudently referred to the College of the Noble Directors as Lords and Patrons of this Province, was already performed and requested in behalf of the supplicant, as evidently appears by the letters received by the supplicant from his father and mother, showing that the proposal of the Director General and Council should be answered, and that the transactions of the Director General in this case were approved, so that it—but under correction, of your Hons. wiser and further seeing judgment—in the supplicant's humble opinion in similar affairs, it would be fruitless to address themselves *de novo* to the aforesaid Directors, in an affair already left by them to the College of the Director General and Council, and of which the circumstances and necessity must be better known to your Hons. than to the aforesaid Directors without any farther orders or directions about it. Therefore renews the supplicant his humble request, that it may please your Hons. to appoint and confirm the supplicant, either absolutely or provisionally, in the solicited *Rectorate*, with the ordinary salary—or to favor the supplicant with your Hons. favorable recommendations—to go—with the vessels now laying ready to sail—on a short trip—under God's guidance to the Fatherlande, to solicit there in person, agreeably to your Hons. apostill, the desired appointment, with the salary annexed to it—so as the common proverb says—no better messenger than the man himself—for which I solicit your Hons. apostill in the margin.

Noble-great and Respectful my Lords,

Your humble and obedient servant,

ÆGIDIUS LUYCK.

Fort Amst., in N. Netherland, 16 Aug., 1663.²

¹ Alb. Rec., xxi, 259.

² Alb. Rec., xxi, 269, 270.

To the Noble, Great and Respected, the Director General and Council in N. Netherland:

N. G. and Respected!—Shew to your Hons. with all reverence, the burgomasters of this city, Amsterdam, in N. Netherland, that they have been informed—as the Rev. Ægidius Luyck thus far exerted himself to instruct the youth—so from this place as from other places, to learn the Latin language, in which, too, they have made considerable progress, to the full satisfaction of their parents; and whereas the aforesaid Luyck, till this moment, remains ignorant if any salary for his labours is intended by your Hons. to bestow upon him—so as he now is soliciting by his petition presented this day; and whereas, on your Hons. recommendations, and our letters last year written to the Directors, the aforesaid Rev. Luyck was requested to act here as schoolmaster in the Latin language, in lieu of the late Rector Curtius, on such a salary as should be allowed to him by the Directors—of which he has no information that any conclusive step was made, so is it that we, experiencing the good instruction and discipline of our youth, deem ourselves obliged humbly to solicit your Hons. that it may please them to grant the supplicant a favorable disposition on his written request—with granting him such a salary as your Hon. in their wisdom and discretion shall deem proper. So that the supplicant's growing zeal—to the detriment of your Hons. and that of our children—and the youth of this city with that sent hither from other places may not be cooled—but rather daily may be increased—to the renown and glory of this city—by our neighbors and other further remote places—in the hope that this our just request shall be maturely considered by your Hons., so that your Hon. shall favor the aforesaid Luyck with an ordinary and competent salary, by which we shall feel ourselves obliged, and remain

Your obedient subjects,

The Burgomasters of the city aforesaid.

By order of the same:

JOANNES NEVIUS,

Secretary.

Amsterdam, in N. Netherland, 16 Aug., 1663.¹

The preceding petition being presented and read, the following apostill was given:

The Director General and Council are, with the supplicants, of opinion that the continuation and encouragement of the Latin school is necessary—and, as it is customary in our Fatherland, that such persons by the cities which make use of them are engaged, so are the supplicants authorized by this, to allow such a salary to the aforesaid Rev. Luyck as they shall deem reasonable—of which salary Director General and Council—provisionally upon the approbation of the Noble Directors shall pay the half. 16 Aug., 1663.

Nota: In virtue of this authorisation, the burgomasters agreed with the Rev. Ægidius Luyck, that he shall receive annually, in seewant [wampum], a 8 for a *st.* thousand *gl.*, [1,000 guilders=\$400], of which the Company shall pay the half.

¹ Alb. Rec., xxi, 271, 272.

² Alb. Rec., xxi, 273.

We are indebted to Henry Onderdonk, Jr., of Jamaica, L. I., for the following item, with various others hereafter quoted :

Jonas Houldsworth was clerk of Hempstead, and schoolmaster, in 1662. He was also a teacher at Southampton, and, I think, at Huntington. His name may be seen in Thompson's L. I.

The employment of a schoolmaster in Bushwyck is recorded in the Council minutes, under date of Dec. 20, 1663 :

Appeared in Council, the Commissaries of the village of Bushwyck, notifying how that they in their village were in great want of a person who would act as clerk (*voorleser*) and schoolmaster, to instruct the youth ; and whereas there was proposed to them the person of Boudewyn Maenhout, from *Crampen de Lek*,¹ that they had agreed with him, viz. : that he should officiate as clerk (*voorleser*), and keep school for the instruction of the youth—for which he should receive $f400$ in seawant, annually, besides free house rent—they solicited therefore, that this transaction might be approved by the Director General and Council in N. Netherland, and that the Company would contribute annually something to facilitate the payment of said salary.

Which being taken in consideration by the Director General and Council in N. Netherland, the engagement of the person and the agreement with the aforesaid Boudewyn Maenhout is hereby approved, provided that he shall previously be examined by the Rev. Ministers of this city, and if they deem him competent for the task, then shall annually be paid by the Company, to render it more easy to aforesaid village to pay that salary, to the aforesaid Boudewyn, $f25$ heavy money.

Done in Fort Amsterdam, in N. Netherland, on the day as above.²

The village of Bergen, now of New Jersey, but formerly included within the limits of New Netherland, seems to have had a school as early as 1661 or 1662, as appears from the following petition :

To the Director General and Council residing in N. Netherland :

Shew reverently, the Sheriff and Commissaries of the village of Bergen, which they presume, is known to your Honours, that before the election of the Commissaries, ye were solicited for Michiel Jansen, deceased, to be favored with the appointment of a clerk (*voorleser*), who should at the same time keep school, to instruct the youth, the person of Engelbert Steenhuysen, who possessed the requisite abilities, so is it that the Sheriff and Commissaries now a year past proposed it to the community, who then approved it, and resolved to engage him not only as clerk (*voorleser*), but with the express stipulation that he, besides this function, was to keep school, which the aforesaid Steenhuysen engaged to do, and did so during five quarters

¹ A village in the Province of Holland on the river de Lek ; there is another on the Menzo. (*Van der Kemp*.)

² Alb. Rec., xx, 297.

of a year—for which was allowed him *f* 250 in seawant, annually—besides some other stipulations—besides the school-money—so as reason and equity shall demand—Now is it so, that the aforesaid Engelbert Steenhuyzen, whereas he has a lot and house, and a double farm, situated in the jurisdiction of the village of Bergen, is, by the complaints of the majority of the community, obliged, with the other inhabitants, to provide for the sustenance of a soldier, by which the aforesaid Engelbert Steenhuyzen considers himself highly aggrieved, and so resigned his office, pretending that a schoolmaster and clerk ought to be exempted from all taxes and burthens of the village—which he says is the common practice through the whole Christian world—which, by the Sheriff and Commissaries, is understood can only take place when such a clerk or schoolmaster does not possess anything else but the school-wharf [lot]—but by no means—when as a schoolmaster in possession of a house and lot, and a double farm—that he, in such a case, should pay nothing from his lot and lands—and the community at large is of the same opinion, as he receives his salary as clerk, and not only is obliged—to act well in his capacity as clerk (*voorleser*), but even to look out and procure himself a proper and convenient place to keep school, which he thus far neglected, and pretends that the community must effect this, so that he may keep his school in it. They cannot perceive how Engelbart Steenhuyzen can be permitted to resign his office, when he neglected to notify his intention a half year before—wherefore the supplicants address themselves to your Hon., humbly soliciting them to insinuate to the aforesaid Engelbart Steenhuyzen to continue in his service this second year—and to decline, if the aforesaid Engelbart Steenhuyzen is or is not obliged, by his possession of a lot and farm, to provide in the maintenance of a soldier, so well as the other inhabitants. Expecting upon this your Hon. resolution, which doing, remain your Hon. s't.

TIELMAN VAN VLEECK.
CASPER STEINMETS.

17 December [1663.]

The Sheriff, Commissaries and Engelbart Steenhuyzen, mentioned in this petition, being summoned to appear before the Council, and being heard, parties at length, after many discussions, agreed that Engelbart Steenhuyzen shall serve his time, agreeably to the contract mentioned in said petition, so as he ought to do.¹

The employment of Johannis la Montagne, jun. (probably the person who served in the City Tavern in 1662), as schoolmaster at (New) Haerlem, is recorded as follows:

To the Noble, Great and Respected Lords, the Director General and Council in New Netherland:

Gentlemen!—With reverence and due submission shew your noble, great and respectful supplicants, subjects residing at N. Haerlem
. . . . having seen and experienced, from Sabbath to Sabbath,

¹ Alb. Rec., xxi, 439, 440.

the small success of the public congregation, and fully believing that better care might be taken of the interests of religion, and the whole worship with more decency performed, if a clerk and schoolmaster on a fixed salary could be engaged, so that the word of God might be heard, an edifying sermon read, catechising introduced, and the sick be visited, it seemed, therefore, to the supplicants of your Hons., whose office is to attend to the common welfare and advantages of aforesaid village . . . to be their duty to speak with the congregation on this subject, and to endeavor to persuade Jean de la Montagne, an inhabitant of that place, to save expence, that he would accept this office—by permission—wherefore they deemed it proper to address your Hon. as the patrons of the church of Jesus Christ, and humbly . . . to solicit that it might please them to consent, both to the establishment of that office and the appointment of said person for the benefit of the church of God, and the not less necessary instruction of the children—but considering . . . their present utter inability to provide a competent and decent salary, and that it was not in their power to collect more for his sustenance than 24 *schepel* corn, they are now most reverently soliciting that it may please your Hon. agreeably to their usual discretion, to contribute something for a decent salary and the better encouragement of

Your humble supplicants and subjects . . .

TEURNEUR,
JOHANNES VERVEELEN.

This is I. P. the mark of JAN PIETERS.

Done in N. Haerlem, 25 December, 1663.¹

[In Council], 10 January [1664].

Presented and read the preceding petition of the Commissaries of N. Haerlem, and heard the verbal information of Mr. Johannis Verveelen, now one of the Commissaries, that it is highly necessary that some person be appointed there as schoolmaster and clerk, so is it, that Director General and Council accept for this purpose the proposed person of Johannis la Montagne, junior—and that he may officiate in both these offices with greater diligence, so shall be annually paid to him by the Company, the sum of fifty *gl.* at the rate of the Company's treasury.²

On the 17th day of March, the Director General and Council issued an edict, requiring the practice of a custom long known in the fatherland, . . . to wit: "the public catechising of the children."³

The first civil ordinance in New Amsterdam enjoining this practice, was as follows:

¹ Alb. Rec., xxii, 9, 10.

² Alb. Rec., xxii, 11.

³ Dunshee, p. 47.

Ordinance

Of the Director General and Council of New Netherland, for the better and more careful instruction of youth in the principles of the Christian religion. Passed 17 March, 1664.

Whereas, it is most highly necessary and most important that the youth from childhood up be instructed not only in reading, writing and arithmetic, but especially and chiefly in the principles and fundamentals of the Reformed religion, according to the lesson of that wise King, Solomon—Train up a child in the way he shall go, and when he is old he will not depart from it—so that in time such men may proceed therefrom, as may be fit to serve their Fatherland as well in the Church as in the State. This, then, being taken into particular consideration by the Director General and Council of New Netherland, because the number of children is, through the merciful blessing of the Lord, considerably increasing here, they have deemed it necessary, in order that so useful and God-acceptable a work may be the more effectually promoted, to recommend and command the Schoolmasters,¹ as we do hereby, that they shall appear in the Church, with the children committed to their care and intrusted to them, on Wednesday before the commencement of the Sermon, in order, after the conclusion of Divine service, that each may, in the presence of the Reverend Ministers and the Elders who may be present, examine his scholars as to what they have committed to memory of the Christian commandments and Catechism, and what progress they have made; after which performance, the children shall be dismissed for that day, and allowed a decent recreation.

Done, Fort Amsterdam in New Netherland, dated as above.²

The following extracts from the official records of Southampton, L. I., have been furnished by Mr. William S. Pelletreau, of that town:

1663, Sept. 22.—At a town meeting, "By ye major vote it is ordered and concluded that Jonas Houldsworth shall have 35^{lbs}. for his schooling per annum, for the term of three years at least, and his pay to be answerable to ye pay engaged to him by Hempstead, with ye allowance of 12 days in the yeare for his oune particular occasions."

1664, Sept. 5.—At a town meeting it is ordered that there shall be a schoolhouse of 20 feet long and 15 feet wide, built at the town's charge and finished fit for use before winter.

Mr. Pietersen, who was employed in 1661, as the sixth official schoolmaster in New Amsterdam, continued to serve in that capacity until at least 1668 or 1669. The following items are taken from the New Amsterdam Records:

TUESDAY, 11 Octob., 1664. In the City Hall.

* * * * *

Mr. Evert Pietersen, schoolmaster of this city, represents, as his allowance from the Company is struck off, that burgomasters and

¹ These were Pietersen and Hoboocken. Dunshee, p. 48.

² N. Y. Col. MSS., x, pt. iii, 101. O'Call. Laws of N. N., 461. Alb. Rec., xxii, 100.

schepens shall be pleased to keep him at the same allowance; to wit: *fl*36 per month, *fl*125 for board, Hollands currency, free house for school and residence, and free passage to *Patria*; offering his service and to continue the same.

Apostille:—Petitioner shall have to be patient for the space of eight days, when his petition shall be disposed of.¹ * * *

No attention seems to have been given to this petition at the time designated, perhaps on account of the pending troubles, resulting, a few days later, in the surrender of New Netherland to the English. The Burgomasters' and Schepens' Court was continued, however, as appears from the records thereof, until November 10, 1774. From these records we copy further facts in regard to schools, as follows:

Sept. 19, 1665.

The petition of Mr. Evert Pietersen, schoolmaster and precentor of this city, being read & considered, requesting that he may have some proper fixed *salarium*, as he was heretofore paid his wages by the Hon^{ble} Company, and has been continued in his employment from that time to the present.

Is apostilled as followeth:—Whereas order shall be shortly made relative to the salary of the ministers of this city, under which the precentorship also comes, proper order shall then be made herein likewise.²

8 May, 1666.

Capt. Steynmets entering demands payment of a year's rent of his house, hired to the city as a city school, due on the first of this month; amounting to the sum of *fl*260.

Petitioner is requested to wait yet a while, as there is at present no money in the chest.³

Feb. 16, 1668.

Evert Pietersen, schoolmaster and precentor, appearing and delivering an a^c. of earned salary w^{ch} he claims from the city, requests payment and further allowance for his future services: If not, says he will leave.

Resolved to speak to the Governor hereupon.⁴

SCHOOLMASTERS IN NEW NETHERLAND.

As the foregoing "Annals" have been arranged chiefly with reference to the chronological order of the events narrated, we have thus far omitted many interesting personal facts which it is now proposed to present in the form of biographical notices, the whole comprising (with the facts contained in the "Annals") all that we know of the several schoolmasters of New Netherland.

¹ N. Amst. Rec., v, 606.
² N. Amst. Rec., [vi], 73.

³ N. Amst. Rec., [vi], 178.
⁴ N. Amst. Rec., [vi], 486.

OFFICIAL SCHOOLMASTERS.

ADAM ROELANTSEN, "*The First Schoolmaster.*" 1633-1639.

Nothing is known of Roelantsen prior to 1633, except that he was born about the year 1606,¹ and that he is several times mentioned as "from Dockum," a city in the northern part of Holland, and once as "van [from] Hamelwaard." There are a few documents in which he is mentioned as "schoolmaster" or "late schoolmaster" in New Amsterdam; from all of which it is presumed that he followed this vocation from 1633 to 1639. He is more frequently mentioned in connection with court proceedings and business transactions, at various times between 1638 and 1653, after which latter date we find no mention of the name Roelantsen. From the character of the suits, some fifteen in number, in which he was engaged, sometimes as plaintiff and sometimes as defendant, with alternations of success and defeat, we have reason to believe that he was at times imprudent and passionate in his language, easily provoked to quarrel with his neighbors, and guilty, in at least one instance, of unchaste demeanor. He was also either plaintiff or defendant in at least five slander suits, in one of which he was made to acknowledge that his antagonist was an honest man, while in another both parties were fined thirty-five stivers for the benefit of the poor. Three of these slander suits were in 1638 and the early part of 1639, and may have been the occasion of his abandonment of teaching, and of his temporary emigration from New Amsterdam to the colonie of Renselaerswyck, where, in 1639, his name was enrolled as a settler. He soon reappears at New Amsterdam, where he incurred a second fine for slander, and also sued two of his neighbors; one for a washing bill, another for trespass in the case of damage done by cattle. These events occurred in 1640 and 1641. In 1642, he employed a carpenter to build a house according to a contract which is still on record. He likewise executed the deed of a house and lot, evidently of little value, as it was occupied at the time by the Company's negroes. He was "weighmaster" in 1643, and obtained the patent of a lot in New Amsterdam. The baptism of two of his children is thus recorded:

Tryntje, June 2, 1641.

Daniel, Feb. 3, 1644.²

Nothing further is recorded of him until 1646, when he was left with four motherless children, for the management of whom, together

¹ N. Y. Col. MSS., i, 50.

² Valentine's Manual, 1863, p. 806.

with the property of the late Mrs. Roelantsen (Lyntje Martens), four curators were appointed, one being "Jan Stevensen, schoolmaster." In July of the same year he had two more law-suits, one of which was for slander. During the months of August, September and October he seems to have visited Holland, and on his return was sued for the passage money of himself and his son. His successful plea in defence was, that he worked his passage as a sailor, and that his son said the prayers. A contract for lumber, and the deed of a house and lot on Manhattan Island, are recorded as business transactions of the same autumn. On the 17th of December, he was convicted of adulterous conduct, and sentenced to be publicly flogged, and then banished; but in consideration of his children and the wintry season, the execution of the sentence was postponed, and was not finally enforced. In 1647, "he was thrown out of the tavern by order of fiscal Van Dyck;" was appointed provost; and gained his cause in an action for debt against the sheriff of Breuckelen (Brooklyn). In 1649, one Jan Appel was authorized by power of attorney to receive a lot of beavers from Jan Flodder and Adam Roelansten. In 1653, he was a private in the Burgher corps of New Amsterdam, and, like Curtius, closed his record with a law-suit respecting pork. What further befell either himself or his children does not appear.

The foregoing facts may be verified and more fully investigated by reference to O'Callaghan's "Calendar of Dutch Manuscripts" and "Register of New Netherland;" the New Amsterdam Records, and Valentine's Manual for 1863, pp. 559-561.

JAN STEVENSEN. 1643-1648.

It has been supposed that Stevensen kept a private school, and if so, he is probably the first one of this class of whom any record occurs. The earliest mention of him, so far as we have observed, is under date of July 3, 1643, at which time a patent was granted to "Jan Stevensen, schoolmaster, of a lot north of Fort Amsterdam, for a house and garden."¹ As already stated in connection with Roelantsen, he was appointed one of the curators of Mrs. Roelantsen's children and estate, March 9, 1646, being then designated as "schoolmaster."² On the 20th of July, 1647, a power of attorney was given by "Jan Stevensen, schoolmaster, to Luycas Smith, to receive certain moneys from the W. I. Company at Amsterdam,"³ and on the 31st of August, 1646, a similar power was given to Stevensen himself by one Schut,⁴ from which we infer that he went

¹ Cal. Dutch MSS., p. 367.

² Cal. Dutch MSS., p. 99.

³ Cal. Dutch MSS., p. 38.

⁴ Cal. Dutch MSS., p. 42.

to Holland about this time. This inference seems to be confirmed by the fact that, on the 26th of October following, Peter van der Linde was appointed clerk of the church '(voorleser) *vice* Steven- sen;¹ and further, by a statement made on the 13th of August, 1649, that "Jan Stevensen, late schoolmaster at New Amsterdam, sold a house and garden north of the fort."²

In view of the foregoing facts, it seems almost certain that Steven- sen was an *official* instead of a *private* schoolmaster, and that he is the one referred to in Stuyvesant's communication to the "Nine Men," dated November 14, 1647 (see p. 7). If this be so, he probably officiated during the long interval between Roelantsen and Cornelissen, and is entitled to rank as the second official schoolmaster in New Amsterdam.

JAN CORNELISSEN. 164(?)–1650.

Very little is positively known in regard to the life and character of this schoolmaster, or the period of his service in this vocation. As a family name, *Cornelissen* frequently occurs in the colonial records, and there evidently were two or more of them bearing the Christian name *Jan*. A carpenter by this name settled in Renselaerswyck in 1635, and was employed by Arendt van Curler to build a house in 1643.³ This was doubtless a very different person from the school- master, who was probably identical with one said to come "from Hoorn," and who, in 1647, executed a power of attorney to a certain person to receive money from his (Cornelissen's) guardian in Hol- land.⁴ Deeds of two lots in New Amsterdam were given by the same person, in the year 1653.⁵ In 1658, "Rutgert Jansen was beaten by Jan Cornelissen, so that the blood flowed." It appeared in court that abusive words passed between the parties, and both were fined; Cor- nelissen, twelve guilders, the other, six.⁶ In 1660, Jan Cornelissen, "the Zelander," had a law-suit with Pieter Janzen, about a road across land sold to the former.⁷ The next year (1661), Jan Cornel- issen was appointed one of the three magistrates of Bushwyck,⁸ and in 1674, a person of the same name was plaintiff in a suit in New Amsterdam, which ended in an amicable settlement.⁹ It is possible that all these facts, excepting that respecting "the carpenter," refer to "the schoolmaster," though this cognomen is not associated with the name in any of the records here cited.

¹ Cal. Dutch MSS., p. 121.

² Cal. Dutch MSS., p. 21.

³ O'Call. Hist. N. N., i, 435, 458.

⁴ Cal. Dutch MSS., p. 40.

⁵ Cal. Dutch MSS., p. 377.

⁶ N. Amst. Rec., iii, 64, 65.

⁷ N. Amst. Rec., iv, 162, 194.

⁸ O'Call. N. N., ii, 430. Brod. N. Y., p. 693.

⁹ N. Amst. Rec., vii, 117.

It is proper to add, that several members of other families seem to have been christened "Jan Cornelissen," and that one such person, a son of Cornelis Jansen, is referred to in the Index to the Calendar of Dutch Manuscripts, and in the body of that work, under the name *Cornelissen*.

WILLIAM VERSTIUS. 1650-1655.

Nothing appears on record in regard to Mr. Verstius, so far as we have observed, beyond the facts stated in the foregoing "Annals" (pp. 10, 12, 13).

JOHANNES DE LA MONTAGNE, JUN^R, *New Amsterdam*, 1652;
Haerlem, 1663.

Dr. Johannes de la Montagne, senior, was born in 1592, and came to New Netherland in 1637. By his first wife, Rachel Monjour, he had four children, of whom Johannes, or Jan, the subject of this sketch, was the eldest. Jan was twice married; first to Petronella Pickoll, by whom he had a son named Vincent, who attained the remarkable age of one hundred and sixteen years, and is the ancestor of all the La Montagne family in these States; and afterwards to Maria Vermilyea, whose three sons were named Abraham, Isaac and Johannes. There were, therefore, three generations bearing the characteristic name of Johannes [or Jan]. The second Jan, the schoolmaster, known as "junior," was one of the pioneer settlers of Haerlem, on Manhattan Island.¹ He also held the following offices under the colonial government, in addition to that of schoolmaster: clerk in bookkeeper's office, prior to 1655; farmer of the revenue (tavern excise), New Amsterdam and Long Island, 1657-8; fire-warden, New Amsterdam, 1658; schoutfiscal (sheriff), Haerlem, 1661; magistrate, Haerlem, 1662, 1663.² Judge Benson's "Memoir," read before the New York Historical Society in 1816, gives a number of interesting reminiscences of the family (pp. 32-34).

HAARMEN VAN HOBBOOKEN. 1655-1664.

In addition to the facts already given, we have ascertained that Hobboeken lost his wife about the year 1656; married Marritje Pieters, a widow, Oct. 26, 1662, and that he had children baptized as follows:

Emmetje, Feb. 12, 1655.

Johannes, Nov. 12, 1656.

Hendrickje, May 28, 1664.³

¹ O'Call. N. N., ii, 21.

² Val. Man., 1862, p. 640; 1863, pp. 564, 824.

³ O'Call. Reg. N. N., pp. 26, 34, 41, 96, 97, 113.



EVERT PIETERSEN. 1661-1668 (?).

We learn, in regard to Pietersen, that he was made executor of Domine Welius, July 12, 1661,¹ and married Aillegond Joris, a widow, for his second wife, June 16, 1669.² He resided on the south side of Brewer (now Stone) street,³ and his estate was assessed at \$2,000, in 1674.⁴

ALEXANDER CAROLUS CURTIUS, *First Latin Schoolmaster*. 1659-1662.

We find nothing respecting Curtius, beyond the extended statement in the foregoing "Annals" (pp. 22-27).

ÆGIDIUS LUYCK, *Second Latin Schoolmaster*. 1662-1664.

Ægidius Luyck came to New Amsterdam in January, 1662, for the purpose of instructing the sons of Director Stuyvesant. He was then twenty-one years of age, and, though young, bore the title of domine, or reverend; but he was merely a theological student at that time. Upon his arrival here, he took charge of the Latin school, established three years before, and which had been up to this time under the care of Alexander Carolus Curtius. At the time of the capitulation, which occurred in October, 1664, he took the oath of allegiance to the English.⁵ In 1665 he visited Holland in company with Director Stuyvesant, who went there to vindicate his course in giving up New Amsterdam to the English without resistance, and while there gave testimony at different times on the subject. Luyck returned to New Amsterdam,⁶ and in December, 1671, was invited to perform service on Sabbath evenings, on account of the sickness of Domine Drisius, he (Luyck) having already officiated several times acceptably.⁷ He was a burgomaster in 1674, and was possessed of considerable property, being assessed at \$5,000 in a tax list dated New Orange, 19th February, 1674, signed by himself, among others, as one of the commissaries.⁸ He was plaintiff in a law-suit about this time, and obtained judgment for \$652, or \$158.⁹

As burgomaster, he signed the articles of capitulation at the recapture of the city in 1674. When, on the final restoration of the colony to the English, the inhabitants were required to take the oath

¹ N. Amst. Rec., iv, 558.

² Val. Man., 1862, p. 618.

³ Val. Hist. of N. Y., pp. 115, 120, 325.

⁴ Alb. Rec., xxii, 406.

⁵ N. Y. Col. Doc., iii, 75.

⁶ N. Y. Col. Doc., ii, 469.

⁷ N. Amst. Rec., vi, 653.

⁸ Alb. Rec., xxii, 406; xxiii, 182, 183; see, also, xiv, 74.

⁹ N. Amst. Rec., vii, 175, 220, 225, 229, 230.

of allegiance to the new government, Luyck, with others, refused to do so,¹ and soon after left the country, finally, for the fatherland.²

In December, 1663, Luyck was married to Judith Isendoorn, who has generally been supposed to have been connected with the Stuyvesant family, but whom recent investigations prove to have been only a namesake of another person thus connected. Domine Selyns, who was gifted with considerable poetic talent, invoked the muses at this marriage festival, which has been classed among the notable ones of that early period.³ We are indebted to a volume of the "Bradford Club Series," entitled "Anthology of New Netherland," by the Hon. Henry C. Murphy, for the following elegant version of Selyns' Nuptial Song, which furnishes a pleasing episode to our narrative :

NUPTIAL SONG

FOR ÆGIDIUS LUYCK AND JUDITH VAN ISENDOORN, MARRIED THE SECOND DAY OF CHRISTMAS.

AIR—*O Christmas Night.*

1. O, Christmas night ! day's light transcending ;—
 Who no beginning had or ending
 Until He man became, was God.
 Then He who ne'er before was human .
 Was born in Bethlehem of woman,
 When nips the frost the verdant sod.
2. This richest babe comes poor in being,
 More pearly within than to the seeing
 With diadem and royal power ;
 He takes no heed of greater places,
 But that small spot alone embraces,
 Where light illumines the midnight hour.
3. A maid remaining is the mother
 Of our salvation-working author,
 Who so defends us by his grace,
 We either death or devil fear not,
 For God in Him became incarnate,
 And wrestles with that hellish race.
4. This Prince,—do they desire to find him ?
 They're worn-out swaddling clothes that bind him.
 A manger, spread with hay, 's his bed.
 His throne is higher than the highest,
 Yet he among the cattle lieth.
 What Him, to such a lot, has led ?

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., ii, 500.

² Murphy's Anthology of N. N., (BRAD. Club Series), p. 171.

³ Val. Man., 1862, p. 772.

5. And as they bring this child before them,
 Luyck comes and marries Isendooren,
 Standing before this Christlike crib;
 And finds when her consent is shewn,
 Flesh of his flesh, bone of his bone,
 For Judith is his second rib.
6. Now seeks he God with chaste affection.
 Who take before such crib direction,
 Are better than this Bethlehem,
 Which Christ no resting place will give;
 For they, the after-life, shall live
 With Him in New Jerusalem.¹

Selyns' sportive fancy is well exhibited in a second poem in honor of the same nuptial pair. On account of the length of this production, we give only extracts therefrom:

BRIDAL TORCH

FOR REV. ÆGIDIUS LUYCK, RECTOR OF THE LATIN SCHOOL AT NEW AMSTERDAM,
 AND JUDITH VAN ISENDOORN, LIGHTED SHORTLY AFTER THE ESOPUS MURDER
 COMMITTED AT WILTWYCK, IN NEW NETHERLAND, BY THE INDIANS, IN THE
 YEAR 1663.

How soon the flame of war the flame of love destroys!
 For Mars comes wickedly, the innocent to injure;
 Nor does it Cupid please, who peace and love enjoys,
 And starts, at sight of arms, to hide himself from danger.

* * * * *
 And had he not betimes unto his wings betaken,
 They sure had killed or wounded him, or captive borne
 For Indian chiefs to serve, or Indian forts to work in.
 But quickly sat he on the mountains of Katskil,
 And thus his woe bewailed: "Domestic joys ne'er bless you,
 Till Hymen tends my loves, and wedlock serves my will."

* * * * *
 With these and like complaints the rogue his time did spend,
 And then flew back again, to town and hamlet hieing.
 But where he flew nor bow nor arrow had to bend;
 And his vocation so with difficulty plying.

* * * * *
 The captives, now and then, as from the grave return;
 The savage monster's slain; his wife and children vanish;
 His maize is all destroyed; his fort burnt to the ground;
 His guns for booty ta'en; his seewan fills our coffers,

* * * * *
 Oft through interpreters, for terms the Indians sue;
 The port of peace to gain they earnestly endeavor.

When Cupid hears of this, he comes with great ado
 And asks, "Who has my bow? and wails, "Where is my quiver?"

* * * * *

¹ Murphy's Anthology, pp. 133, 135.

They gave his weapons back, but made him no reply,
 Seeking to hush his wrath by thus his arms restoring.
 He quickly seizes them, and draws his bow on high,
 As if he wished to pierce some special mark above him.
 The fort, New Amsterdam, is now by all possessed;
 While Judith stands beneath, Luyck looks from the embrasure,
 And ere they see or think, he shoots Luyck in the breast.
 Nor does one shaft suffice his cov'nant-making pleasure.
 "Where did he shoot? where was't he shot?" inquire the folks.
 Luyck speaks not, for he feels something his heart is boring.
 As all look up at Luyck, so Judith upward looks.
 He shoots a second time and pierces Isendooren.
 This great commotion makes and causes, far and wide,
 Reechoings of joy. While speaks he not, the cry
 Resounds throughout the land: "Joy to the groom and bride,
 Joy to the married pair, and joy eternally."
 "Blessings a thousand fold, attend them both," they shout,
 "In body and in soul, here and hereafter flowing.
 Joy fill the house within: no sorrow lurk without:
 Who gives us happiness, the same on them bestowing."
 Now we, who from this rogue, do neither child of Mars,
 Nor Venus understand, nor yet the ways of mortals,
 Save what to wedlock leads and from uncleanness bars,
 Wish them the best increase, and joy within their portals.
 May this new married pair, peace and salvation know:
 The budding hopes of Luyck and worth of Isendooren,
 Develop more and more, and thus with time so grow,
 They at the dying hour, the port of heaven may mor in.¹

RICHARD MILLS, *Middleburgh (Newtown), L. I.* 1657(?)–1661.

In the foregoing "Annals," we have spoken of the school at Middleburgh as probably the second one established on Long Island. It appears, however, from O'Callaghan's "Register of New Netherland" (page 120), that Mr. Mills, the teacher of the school, officiated in the place of the late minister, Rev. John Moore, as early as 1657; and it is not improbable that his duties of schoolmaster were assumed at that time. If this inference be correct, Mr. Mills was probably the *first* instead of the *second* schoolmaster on Long Island.

He removed to Westchester in 1661, where he became involved in a civil disturbance, which led to his arrest and imprisonment. Mr. Riker says:

Richard Mills, the late schoolmaster of Middleburgh, did much to forward the revolt at Westchester,² of which place he had become a resident and the leading magistrate. Stuyvesant had him arrested, and he remained in prison more than a month, but pleading with

¹ Murphy's Anthology, pp. 137–147.

² This was an attempt to throw off the Dutch authority.

much importunity to be liberated, "being ancient and weakly," and intending in September to sail for Virginia, the Council, on June 18, 1663, passed an order for his release, and he, some time after, left the province.¹

Copies of two successive petitions by Mills for release from imprisonment, are given at length in "Bolton's History of Westchester County," vol. ii, 167, 168. We have met with nothing further, illustrative of his early life or subsequent history.

ADRIAEN HEGEMAN, *Midwout (Flatbush)*. 1659-1671.

Rev. Dr. Strong, in his History of Flatbush (p. 109), says of Adriaen Hegeman: "He was one of the original proprietors of the town, and was the owner of the farm lying immediately north of the property now [1842] in the tenure of Mr. Isaac Cortelyou. He was the ancestor of the widow of the late Peter Lefferts, and probably of the whole family of Hegemans now living. He was engaged as schoolmaster from 1659 to 1671." It also appears that he was a magistrate of Midwout as early as 1654,² was appointed sheriff in 1660,³ officiated as secretary of schout and schepens' court of Breuckelyn in 1661,⁴ and was schout, and member of a convention held at Midwout, in 1664.⁵ His widow, Cattelyna Hegeman, is mentioned as applying to the Commanders and Honorable Council, in 1673, for leave to proceed with immediate execution against debtors, which was granted.⁶

Dr. Strong mentions another Adriaen Hegeman, perhaps a son of the former, as schoolmaster in Flatbush from 1719 to 1741, and also mentions, in his reminiscences of the Revolution, that the British "knocked out large port-holes in the house of Adriaen Hegeman which stood on the spot where Mrs. Cynthia Lefferts is now [1842] living."⁷

CAREL DE BEAUVOIS, *Breuckelen (Brooklyn)*. 1661- (?)

A brief sketch of this person (the greater part of which, as quoted in Stiles' History of Brooklyn, has been given on pages 185, 186), and the genealogy of his descendants, will be found in Riker's Annals of Newtown, pp. 406-410. We only add the following record, from which it appears that he originally intended to teach in New Amsterdam:

¹ Riker's Annals of Newtown, p. 59.

² *Ante*, p. 181.

³ O'Call. Register of N. N., pp. 76, 145.

⁴ N. Y. Col. Doc., ii, 603.

⁵ Stiles' Hist. of Brooklyn, i, 112.

⁶ Strong's Hist. of Flatbush, pp. 110, 143

FRIDAY, 27th June, 1659. In the City Hall.

* * * * *

The undersigned persons appear in Court, requesting their Small Burgher Right: Carel Beauvois, of Leiden, intending to keep school here; Puck Jensen van Oldenburgh; Antony van Aalst, all of whom have taken the Burgher oath.¹

ANDRIES VAN DER SLUYS,² *Esopus (Kingston)*. 1658(?).

This person wrote to Director Stuyvesant, from Esopus, Sept. 28, 1658, as follows:

* * * * *

The inhabitants here are very desirous to retain me in the service [of *voorleser* or reader], in order to explain the word of the law according to my poor ability, and to catechise the children and instruct them in reading and writing; but inasmuch as mine Heer General had spoken with them about a minister, they cannot engage me for a term of years. Therefore it is my humble and respectful petition to mine Heer General, that he would be pleased to assist me herein or otherwise, so that I may by this means and the help of God get honestly through the world.³

* * * * *

We find no mention of this application in the Council minutes, nor any further evidence that he officiated as schoolmaster at Esopus.

ARENT EVERTSEN MOLENAAR, *New Amstel (Delaware)*. 1661.⁴

This person seems to have succeeded Evert Pietersen as schoolmaster at the above settlement.

ENGELBERT STEENHUYSEN, *Bergen*. 1661-1663(?).

— REINIER, *Midwout (Flatbush)*. 1661-?.⁵

JONAS HOULDSWORTH, *Hempstead*, 1662; *Southampton*, 1663-1665(?); *Huntington* (?)—(?).

BOUDEWYN MAENHOUT, *Bushwyck*. 1663-?.⁶

We find nothing beyond the documents heretofore quoted, relative to either of these schoolmasters.

ANDRIES JANSZ (JANSEN), *Renselaerswyck*. 1650.

Among the signers of the "Address of citizens of Albany to the Earl of Bellomont," dated Aug. 24, 1700,⁷ and on the list of freeholders in Albany in 1701,⁸ we find the name of Andries Jansz. His child, Catryntje, was baptised Sept. 8, 1672.⁹

¹ N. Amst. Rec., iii, 377.

² O'Call. Reg. N. N., p. 132.

³ N. Y. Col. MSS., xii, 89.

⁴ O'Call. Reg. N. N., p. 133.

⁵ N. Y. Col. Doc., iv, 754.

⁶ N. Y. Col. Doc., iv, 940.

⁷ Val. Man., 1863, p. 781.

JACOB JOOSTEN, *Wiltwyck (Kingston)*. 1660-1665.

MATTYS CAPITO, *Wiltwyck*. 166(?)

We are indebted to Jonathan Hasbrouck, Esq., of Kerhonkson, Ulster county, for the following facts :

Jacob Joosten, from "Raagh ande Mesel,¹ in Duyslant," came down to Wiltwycke (Kingston), from Fort Orange, in the fall of 1660, and opened both a "day and night school." He held catechetical exercises twice a week. He was *voorleezer* (reader), and in the organization of the first court, May, 1661, he was appointed messenger or constable. He received from the bench two hundred guilders in sewan per year, which probably covered his office in church, for the court paid the church bills by a *morgen taalen* (land tax). At first he did not have a day school during the summer season, but about 1664 and 1665, he kept one. He, however, kept up the night exercises all the year, except during "*oost tyd*" (harvest time). He married 6th August, 1662, Ariaentje Reschuer, born in Welpe in Gelderland, a widow of Marcus Leenderse, of Fort Orange. He died childless about 1680, and left a small estate to Gerret Cornelissen, New Kerke. I omitted in proper order to say, that he was discharged from office because of disobedience, 1665. Wm. Montagne succeeded him in the schoolroom, but that was under the English. The schoolroom was at first in the shanty which served for guard-house, church and court-room as well. The roof rested on a pole which laid in the crotch of two trees. On the erection of a court-room and church in 1661, he moved his school to it, and stayed in it until he "quit school." He was paid by subscription of the patrons of his school, and received his pay in beans, peas, oats, wheat, hops, etc.

Mattys Capito, secretary of the Esopus, taught a school at one time, but I cannot learn when. He sued Hester Donsoeise for the schooling of her daughter, 1665.

PRIVATE SCHOOLMASTERS IN NEW AMSTERDAM.

ADRIAEN JANSEN VAN ILPENDAM. 1645-1660.

Mr. Valentine says :

For the year previous to his [Roelantsen's] banishment, one Arien Jansen van Ilpendam settled here and opened school.² Having no competitor after Roelantsen's banishment,³ it is to be supposed that Van Ilpendam succeeded in making his pursuit profitable, inasmuch as children were fast accumulating in the town. The terms of tuition charged by this teacher were two beavers per annum. . . . We find, from various sources, that Van Ilpendam taught several

¹ Wesel, (?)

² Mr. Dunshee (p. 51) mentions two private schoolmasters, "Aryaen Jansen" and "Adrian van Ilpendam," whom we conclude to be one and the same person, Adriaen Jansen van Ilpendam.

³ We find no evidence that Roelantsen had been teaching for several years prior to his banishment, i. e., from 1639 to 1646; nor, as we have already seen, was the sentence ever enforced.

children, who afterwards were among the leading citizens in town. He lived in this city and taught school during many subsequent years, at least as late as in the year 1660. But of his ultimate history we can ascertain nothing. It appears certain, however, that he left no descendants in this colony.¹

We find, however, the following additional record in the "Abstract of Patents," in the office of the Secretary of State, from which we conclude that Ilpendam removed to Beverwyck (Albany) and lived there a number of years :

May 21, 1667—To Adriaen Jansen van Ilpendam, to confirm a conveyance to him, made March 14, 1658, by Jochem Wessels, of a certain lot of ground lying in Beverwyck, at Albany.² * * *

We have also quoted in the "Annals" (p. 16), a court record dated at Fort Orange (Albany), in 1660, in relation to school money.

DAVID PROVOOST. 1647 (?).

Dr. O'Callaghan, in his "Register of New Netherland," speaking of the "Nine Men" (p. 55), says: "They held their sessions in David Provoost's schoolroom;" and on page 130, he mentions Aryaen Jansen [Van Ilpendam] and David Provoost, as school-masters in 1647.

Mr. Provoost was a prominent citizen of New Amsterdam, and one of the "Nine Men," in 1652; but we find no other mention of him as a schoolmaster.

In the list of baptisms in the Dutch Church, we find the names of nine children of David Provoost. These baptisms occurred between February 24, 1641, and March 26, 1656.³ He died in 1656, leaving his widow, Margaret Jellisen (or Gillisen), and several children who afterwards became prominent citizens, and whose descendants are now numerous in the State.⁴

JOOST CARELSE. 1649.⁵

We find no original record of his service as a schoolmaster, but learn that he took the oath of allegiance to the English at the capitulation in 1664,⁶ and that he had five children baptized between Sept. 15, 1658, and Oct. 14, 1666.⁷

¹ Valentine's Manual, 1863, p. 561.

² Abs. of Patents, p. 162.

³ Valentine's Manual, 1863, p. 804.

⁴ Valentine's Hist. of N. Y., p. 143.

⁵ O'Call. Reg. N. N., p. 130.

⁶ N. Y. Col. Doc., iii, 75.

⁷ Val. Man., 1863, p. 750.

HANS STEYN. *Licensed, 1652.*

The following record occurs in the Council minutes for Sept. 2, 1652:

On the petition of Hans Steyn, soliciting permission to keep school,—granted.¹

It appears from an affidavit made Dec. 7, 1638, that he was, at that time, a midshipman, twenty-four years of age.² He had a son, Laurens, baptized Aug. 10, 1652;³ was a deputy jailor, in 1664, residing, for a period, in the city hall; was taxed, in 1665, for the city defences;⁴ but soon returned to Holland, as appears from an affidavit made in Amsterdam in 1666, in which his age is said to be "about forty-seven."⁵ It will be observed that there is a discrepancy of five years in the above two statements, as to the age of Steyn, which is not reconciled by reference to the original records.

ANDRIES HUDDE. *Applied for a License, Dec. 31, 1654.*

In December, 1654, this person, as already seen, applied for a license to teach school, which application was referred to the minister and consistory, but with what result does not appear; though it is assumed by Dunshee⁶ and others, that it was granted, and that he is therefore entitled to be classed among the private schoolmasters of New Amsterdam. Hudde was born in Amsterdam, in 1608; came to this country in 1629, and married Geertruyd Boornstra, widow of Hendrick de Foreest. He was a member of the Director's Council in 1633, 1636 and 1637; provincial secretary, in 163(?) ; commissary of stores, in 1637; surveyor general, in 1642; commissary at Fort Nassau, on the Delaware river, in 1645 and 1647; whence he afterwards returned to New Amsterdam, and was again surveyor of New Netherland, in 1654. In 1657, he returned to the settlements on the Delaware, where he held various official positions, from 1655 to 1663. During the latter year, while on his way to Maryland, he was seized with a fever and died.⁷

JACOBUS VAN CURLER. 1658.

This person was born about the year 1611, as appears by sundry "declarations" in the Register of the Provincial Secretary, in which the age of the deponent, as usual, was stated. He held various offices

¹ Alb. Rec., vi, 3. Cal. Dutch MSS., p. 126.

² Alb. Rec., i, 68.

³ Val. Man., 1863, p. 812.

⁴ Val. Hist. of N. Y., pp. 85, 316.

⁵ N. Y. Col. Doc., ii, 475.

⁶ Dunshee, p. 51.

⁷ Valentine's Manual, 1863, p. 168.

O'Call. Reg. N. N. (See Index.)

in the colony, from 1633 to 1662. In 1658, as already seen, he attempted to teach without a license, and having subsequently applied for permission, was peremptorily refused upon what seem to have been technical grounds (see p. 20).

The following marriage refers to the subject of this sketch :

Aug. 4, 1652. Jacob Coorlaar; from Nieuwercke.
Lysbeth van Hoogvelt, from Aernham.¹

JAN LUBBERTSEN. 1658.²

Marriage record:

June 7, 1659. Jan Lubbertsen, from Edam.
Magdalena Theuris, from Voorsthuysen.³

Baptisms:

Eight children, from Dec. 29, 1660, to Aug. 25, 1683.⁴

JAN JURIAENSE BECKER. *Licensed, Aug. 16, 1660.*

The earliest mention of Becker which we have seen, is under date of August 24, 1656, at which time, as clerk of the church at Fort Casimir on the South (Delaware) river, he petitioned for a salary, which was granted.⁵ In January, 1660, William Beeckman, writing from Altoona to Stuyvesant, states that Jan Jurianse Becker reads the sermons on Sundays.⁶ It appears from his petition, already quoted, for a license to teach, that he was at that time keeping tavern, and we find that he had then been convicted of selling liquor to the Indians, and fined five hundred guilders for the offence.⁷ He, however, applied for a pardon, which was promptly granted⁸ on the ground that this was a common practice, as shown by the affidavit of other parties. He seems finally to have removed to Albany, and to have been an alderman in 1690-1692.⁹

FRANS CLAESSEN. 1660.

Mr. Valentine says:

"In 1660, Frans Claessen kept a private school in this city. He died in 1662."¹⁰

We find his name, however, on the list of inhabitants taxed for the city defences, in 1665.¹¹ His child, Tymon, was baptized, September 26, 1657.¹²

¹ Valentine's Manual, 1861, p. 645.

² O'Call. Reg. N. N., p. 131.

³ Val. Man., 1861, p. 649.

⁴ Val. Man., 1863, p. 792.

⁵ Cal. Dutch MSS., p. 173.

⁶ Cal. Dutch MSS., p. 340.

⁷ Cal. Dutch MSS., pp. 209, 210.

⁸ Alb. Rec., xxiv, 192.

⁹ N. Y. Col. Doc., iii, 771, 772, 773; iv, 941.

¹⁰ Val. Man., 1863, p. 565.

¹¹ Val. Hist. of N. Y., p. 816.

¹² Val. Man., 1863, p. 751.

JOHANNES VAN GELDER. *Licensed, Sept. 31, 1663.*

Marriage record :

May 19, 1686. Johannes Van Gelder and Aefje Roos, beth of N. York.¹

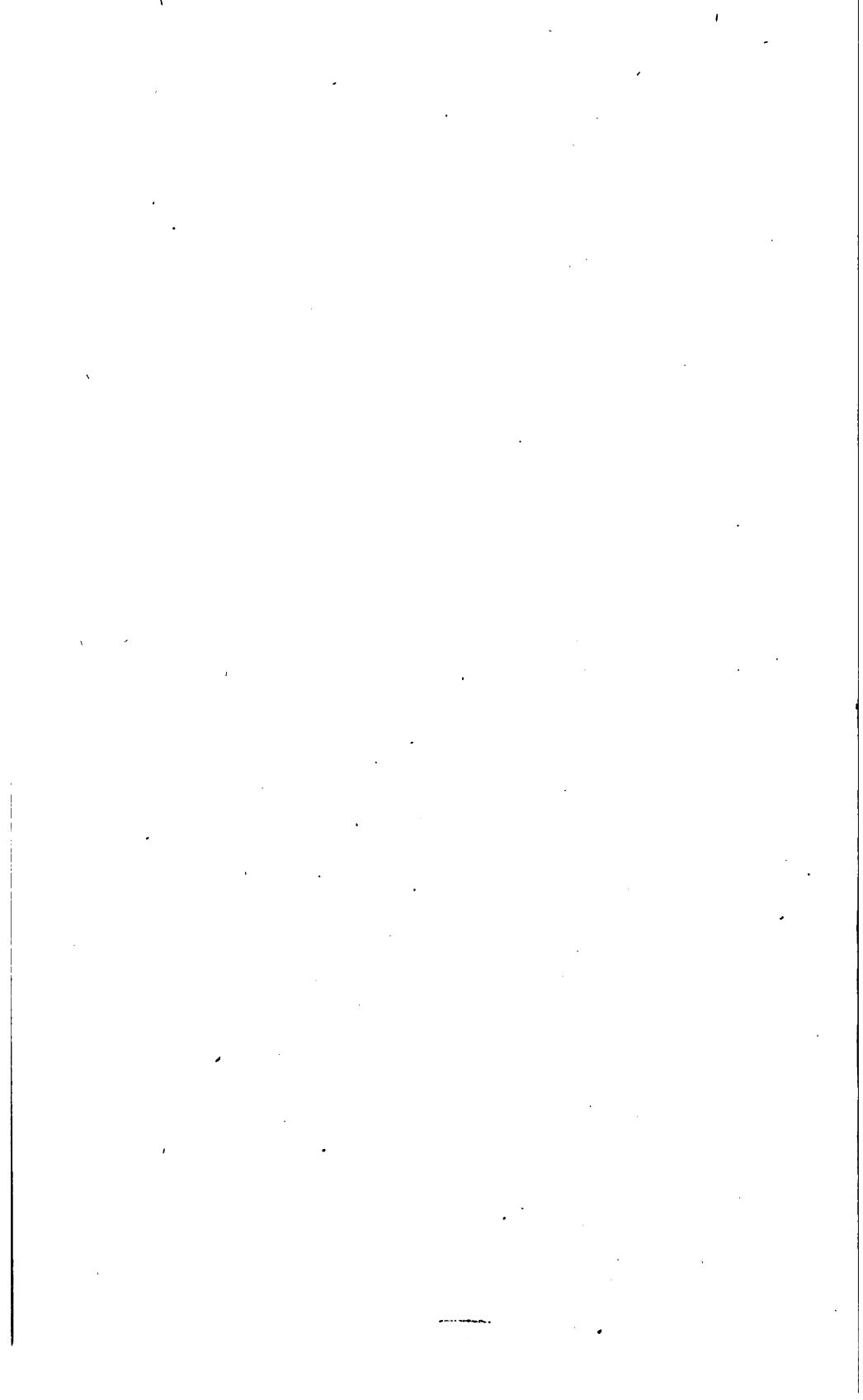
Baptisms :

Five children, between Feb. 20, 1687, and Nov. 17, 1695.²

From the foregoing view of educational affairs during the Dutch colonial period, we infer that the existing system and condition of education in this State is not the growth merely of the present or of the last preceding century, but that it owes its origin, in part, to the character, customs and policy of our ancestors of New Netherland, whose influence in the formation of social and State institutions by no means ceased when the sceptre of authority was formally transferred to other hands. Viewed in this light, these "Annals of Education in New Netherland" are to be regarded not as antiquities of obsolete importance, but rather as constituting the first chapter in the history of the system of public education established in this State.

¹ Val. Man., 1861, p. 666.

² Val. Man., 1868, p. 823.



CHAPTER II.

SECOND PERIOD.

PUBLIC EDUCATION IN THE COLONY OF NEW YORK.

PART I.

FROM THE CAPITULATION BY THE DUTCH, TO THE FIRST 'LEGISLATIVE ACT FOR
FOUNDING A COLLEGE. 1664-1746.

The establishment of English supremacy in New Netherland seems to have occasioned, as one of its incidental fruits, the promulgation, by Governor Nicolls, of an exclusive license to one John Shutte, to teach an English school at Albany, then a rude frontier settlement, though long since and now the capital of the State. It adds interest to this brief and unpretending document, which, however, more than almost any other of that era, embodies and declares a settled policy in regard to educational affairs, adopted, we may suppose, from the conquered Dutch themselves,—to find it also entitled, by chronological precedence, to the first place among our gleanings for the period under consideration. This warrant for the exercise of a “little brief authority” in the pedagogue’s vocation, having served its original purpose, has lain dormant in the archives of the State almost or quite two centuries, and might not have been hitherto brought to light, had not an enterprising local annalist (Mr. Munsell) recently transferred it to the printed page from which, as well as from the original record, we are enabled to quote:

The Governor’s license, granted unto John Shutte, for teaching of the English tongue at Albany.

WHEREAS, the teaching of the English tongue is necessary in this government; I have, therefore, thought fitt to give license to John Shutte to be the English Schoolmaster at Albany; And, upon condition that the said John Shutte shall not demand any more wages from each Schollar than is given by the Dutch to their Dutch Schoolmasters, I have further granted to the said John Shutte that hee shall bee the onely English Schoolmaster at Albany.

Given under my hand, at Fort James in New York, the 12th day of October, 1665.¹

RICH'D NICOLLS.

¹ Munsell’s *Annals of Albany*, iv, 16; Orders, Warrants and Letters (MS.), in office of Secretary of State, ii, 17.

Our next quotation, of five years' later date, is from the records of the succeeding administration of Governor Lovelace, and is almost identical with the foregoing as to subject-matter, being also a license to teach at Albany.

An order for Jan Jurians Bleecker [Beecker, or Becker] to be schoolmaster at Albany.

WHEREAS, Jan Jeurians Beecker had a Graunt to keep y^e Dutch school at Albany for y^e teaching of youth to read & to wryte y^e which was allowed of and confirmed to him by my predecessor Coll. Richard Nicolls Notwithstanding which severall others not so capable do undertake y^e like some particular tymes & seasons of y^e yeare when they have no other Employment, where by y^e Schollars removing from one Schoole to another do not onely give a great discouragement to y^e maister who makes it his businesse all y^e yeare but also are hindred & become y^e more backwards in there learning ffor y^e reasons aforesaid I have thought fitt that y^e said Jan Jurians Beecker who is esteemed very capable that way shall be y^e allowed schoolmaster for y^e instructing of y^e youth at Albany & partes adjacent he following y^e said Employment Constantly & diligently & that no other be admitted to interrupt him It being to be presumed that y^e said Beecker for y^e youth and Jacob Joosten who is allowed of for y^e teaching of y^e younger children are sufficient for that place.

Given under my hand at ffort James in New Yorke this 16th day of May, 1670.¹

Mr. Henry Onderdonk, Jr., has furnished the following items from the official records of the town of Hempstead, Queens county :

1669.— — Houlding [Houldsworth ?] (first name not recorded), schoolmaster, bought 3 quires white paper at 4s. 6d. in Flushing.

1670.—Peter Johnson *schol.*² occurs in the Hempstead Records.

1670, May 1.—Richard Gildersleeve is hired to be drummer for one year at 25s. in corn, and town clerk at 40s. In case the expected schoolmaster comes and is made town clerk, then Gildersleeve is to be paid for the time he serveth.

Richard Charlton, schoolmaster, came in July.

Governor Lovelace seems, in one instance at least, to have approved himself as an "exactor of righteousness," on the principle that "the laborer is worthy of his hire," the documentary evidence whereof is as follows :

An Ord. made on behalf of M^r. Charlton for getting in his money from y^e Towne of Hempstead, for teaching School there.

WHEREAS, I am given to understand that y^e major part of yo^r Towne did, at a Publick Meeting Contract wth Richard Charlton to

¹ Munsell's Annals, iv, 15; Court of Assize Rec., ii, 536.

² Might not *schol* stand for *scholasticus*, schoolmaster? Another addition to his name is "cordwainer." (H. O., Jr.)

keep a Schoole to Instruct y^e Children & Youth there to write and read, the w^{ch} hee hath performed for the whole time of y^e Contract, yet diverse of the Towne, although they have received the Benefitt thereof, doe refuse or too long delay the Payment contracted for; These are to require you to cause speedy Payment to bee made unto him, according to your Contract, that Persons of that Calling bee not discouraged, otherwise hee will have good Remedy against you at Law to your greater Charge and Disparagement¹. GIVEN under my Hand at ffort JAMES, in New Yorke this 21th day of March 1671.

FRAN: LOVELACE.

*To y^e Justices of the Peace, Constable, & Overseers at Hempstead.*¹

During the temporary re-occupancy of the government of the province by the Dutch, under Governor Colve, in 1673, an ordinance was promulgated, from which the following extracts are taken :

ORDINANCE

Of the Governor General and Council of New Netherland, explaining the Duties and Powers of the Schout and Schepens of Midwout, Amesfoort, Breuckelen, New Utrecht, Gravesend and Bushwyck. Passed 1 October, 1673.

[N. Y. Col. MSS., xxiii, 83.]

Art. 1. The Sheriff and Magistrates shall, each in his quality, take care that the Reformed Christian Religion be maintained in conformity to the Synod of *Dordrecht*, without permitting any other Sects attempting any thing contrary thereto.

* * * * *

9. The Sheriff and Schepens shall have power to conclude on some ordinances for the welfare and peace of the inhabitants of their district, such as laying Highways, setting off lands and gardens, and in like manner, what appertains to agriculture, observance of the Sabbath, erecting Churches, School-houses, or similar public works.

Item, against fighting and wrestling, and such petty offenses, provided such Ordinances are not contrary, but as far as possible, conformable to the Laws of our Fatherland and the Statutes of this Province; and, therefore, all orders of any importance shall, before publication, be presented to the Chief Magistrate, and his approval thereof requested.²

NOTE.—Similar Instruction was sent to Flushing, Hemsted, Middleburgh, Jamaica, Oysterbay, Southampton, Southold, Seatacot, Huntington and East Hampton, on L. I., to Swanenburg, Hurley & Marbletown, in the Esopus; to Elizabethtown, Woodbridge, Shrewsbury, Newarke, Bergen, Piscataway and Middletown, behind Achter Cul; and to Staten Island and Westchester.³

¹ General Entries (MS.) in office of Sec'y of State, iv, 117; see also a memorandum in Onderdonk's L. I. and N. Y. (Scrap-books in State Library), i, 102.

² ³ O'Callaghan's Laws of New Netherland, 476-480; N. Y. Doc. Hist. i, 426, 427 (4^{ed.}); 655-658 (8^{ed.}).

It does not appear, so far as we have seen, that any disagreement, in regard to school matters, arose between the general and local authorities, under the above ordinance or otherwise, except in the town of Bergen (N. J.), which was then considered a part of New Netherland. On this point, the following records speak for themselves:

At a Council holden in Fort Wm. Hendrick the 24th December, 1673.

Present—Anthony Colve, Governor-General.

Cornelis Steenwyck, Councillor.

* * * *

The Schout and Magistrates of the town of Bergen requesting that the inhabitants of all the settlements dependent on them, of what religious persuasion soever they may be, shall be bound to pay their share towards the support of the Precentor and Schoolmaster, &c., which being taken into consideration by the Governor and Council,

It is ordered :

That all the said inhabitants, without any exception, shall, pursuant to the resolution of the Magistrates of the town of Bergen, dated 18th X^{ber}, 1672, and subsequent confirmation, pay their share for the support of said Precentor and Schoolmaster.¹

* * * *

It might be inferred from the last paragraph above, were other evidences of the fact wanting, that the change of administration from the Dutch to the English, and *vice versa*, for a brief period in 1673, did not materially disturb or interfere with local officers and their official duties.

At a Council, holden in Fort Willeim Hendrick, this 24th May, 1674.

Present—[as on Dec. 24, 1673, and]

Secretary Nicholaes Bayard, assumed Councillor.

* * * *

The Schout and Magistrates of the town of Bergen, complaining by petition, that some of the inhabitants of their dependent hamlets, in disparagement of the previous order of the Governor-General and Council, dated the 24 X^{ber} last, obstinately refuse to pay their quota to the support of the Precentor and Schoolmaster.

Ordered :

The Governor-General and Council persist in their previous mandate of the 24th X^{ber} last and order the Schout to proceed to immediate execution against all unwilling debtors.²

* * * *

At a Council held in Fort Willem Hendrick, 15th June, 1674.

Present—[as on May 24, 1674, and]

Fiscal Willem Knyff, as assumed Councillor.

* * * *

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., ii, 672.

² N. Y. Col. Doc., ii, 714

On petition of Lourens Andries, and Joost van der Linde, agents for the inhabitants of Mingagque and Pemrepogh, requesting to be excused from contributing to the support of the schoolmaster at Bergen, &c.

Ordered:

Copy hereof to be furnished the Magistrates of the town of Bergen to answer the same.¹

* * * *

At a Court held in Fort Willem Hendrick, on the 5th of July, 1674.

Present—[as on May 24, 1674],

* * * *

The Governor and Council of New Netherland, having seen the complaint of the town of Bergen against the inhabitants of the villages of Pemrepogh, Mingagquy, &c., and the answer given by them, in regard to what the inhabitants of Pemrepogh and Mingagquy aforesaid, owe for the support of the Schoolmaster, and precentor of the town of Bergen, it is after due inquiry resolved and ordered, that the inhabitants of Pemrepogh and Mingagquy, shall promptly pay their share for the support aforesaid, on pain of proceeding against them with immediate execution.²

* * * *

The foregoing action on the part of the Governor and Council seems to have fully settled and confirmed the policy of the Dutch administration in regard to free public schools supported solely by taxation, and which, but for the re-conquest by the English, might, perhaps, have continued without interruption to this day.

It seems from the next quotation that chivalrous martial exercises received some attention in the young metropolis at this early period:

By the Governor.

WHEREAS, application [part of MS. destroyed] . . . me, I do consent . . . —p^t Thomas Smith to admitt and teach any Gentlemen or other free Men the use or Exercise of Armes, for which to meet at any fitt times and Places within this City, without any Lett or Molestation: Comporting themselves as they ought. GIVEN under my Hand in New York this 18th day of December, 1675.

*To all Magistrates, Officers, or others whom it may Concern.*³

The zeal of certain constables of Long Island for the mental and moral welfare of the people, as exhibited in the annexed petition, may be commended as worthy of imitation by police officers and magistrates of the present day:

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., ii, 720.

² N. Y. Col. MSS., xxv, 68.

³ N. Y. Col. Doc., ii, 730.

To y^e Right Hono^r^{abl} Edmond Androus Esq^r. Governor Gen^l of all his Royall Highnes Territory in America & the Wo^{pp}full his Maj^{ties} Justices of y^e Board sitting in thy Honorable Court of Assizes this 4th of Octo^r, 1677.

The humble Desire of y^e Constables of y^e East & North Rideing on Long Island :

To yo^r Hono^r & Wo^{pp} most humbly Showeth it is Theirre Desire :

That the maintenance and Encouragem^t for y^e Ministry may by some way bee established & that such Encouragem^t may bee that there may bee A Minister in each respective Towne that wants. That there may also bee some way established for the Maintenance of A Schoolle-Ma^r in each Towne.¹

* * * *

Professor Jonathan Pearson, of Union College, translator and editor of the "Early Records of the City and County of Albany, and Colony of Rensselaerswyck (1656-1675)," has kindly furnished several items, as follows :

On the 4th of April, 1676, Gerrit Swartt, Jan Becker and Arien Appel were chosen Schoolmasters of Albany; they were then to be the sole Schoolmasters of the Village; but shortly after, the same year, Luykas Gerritse [Wyngaard] was also appointed Schoolmaster *because he was impotent in his hand*.²

(1.) Gerrit Swartt was appointed Schout fiscal or sheriff of Rensselaerswyck in 1652. He was succeeded by Captain Salisbury in 1670.³

(2.) Jan Jurriaense Becker [of whom a brief biographical sketch has already been given in our "Annals" of New Netherland, *ante* p. 54] was an inhabitant of Greenbush opposite Beverwyck, in 1663; afterwards notary public and schoolmaster at Beverwyck, and "esteemed very capable that way, whilst Jacob Jooste Covelens was allowed for y^e teaching of y^e younger children." He made his will the 3^d of Aug., 1694, in which he speaks of son Johannes and daughter Martina (wife of Willem Hogan), who was made administratrix of his estate Dec. 16th, 1697.

(3.) Adriaen or [Arien] Janse Appel came from Leyden: in 1654, he received a patent for a lot at Beverwyck, on condition that the house to be erected thereon be not an ordinary tippling house, but an Inn for travellers; in 1656, he sued Marcelis Janse for the loss of an anker of brandy by drawing it with violence through the streets; from 1676-86, he was one of the four schoolmasters of Albany.

He resided for a time at New Amsterdam. He had two sons, Johannes and Willem, who at different times resided at Schenectady, Albany and New York; at the former place they were both wounded by the French and Indians in their attack upon the village, Feb. 9th, 1690.

¹ N. Y. Col. MSS., xxvi, 122.

² O'Callaghan's Hist. N. Netherland, ii, 184.

³ Albany City Magistrates' Proceedings (MS.), vol. i, in City Clerk's office.

(4.) Luykas Gerritse [Wingaard] was by trade a baker, and in 1715 occupied the south corner of Broadway and State street. His wife was Anna Janse Van Hoesen. They had five sons and one daughter. He made his will Oct. 30th, 1709.

We have been indebted to Rev. Dr. Strong's "History of Flatbush" for a few items relating to the Dutch period; and we now quote at greater length from the same valuable little work, showing the customs of the olden time in regard to schools and schoolmasters:

From the records of the town [Flatbush], it appears that the schoolmaster acted as Town Clerk, and as the rates of tuition were low, previously to the American revolution, the offices of sexton and "Foresinger," or chorister of the church, were conferred upon him with a view to increase his emoluments. He received all interment fees for infants and adults, according to a scale of established prices, and for his services as chorister, he was paid an annual salary by the consistory of the church. The chorister, in addition to his duty of taking the lead in setting and singing the Psalms and Hymns, was also required to ring the bell for all public services, to read the commandments at the commencement of the morning worship, and the Apostles' creed in the afternoon. These latter services were all performed in the Dutch language, and uniformly continued so until about the year 1790, at the time when Mr. Gabriel Ellison, the first English schoolmaster, left the village.

The following is a list of the schoolmasters of the town of Flatbush, from the year 1659 to the year 1802, when the village school was removed into the Academy:

Adrian Hegeman	from 1659 to 1671
Jacop Joosten.....	" 1671 " 1673
Francays De Buryne [Bruynne].....	" 1673 " 1674
Michael Hainelle.....	" 1674 " 1675
Jan Gerrit Van Marckje [Marcken].....	" 1675 " 1680
Derick Storm.....	" 1680 " 1681
Jan Tiebout.....	" 1681 " 1682
Johannes Van Eckkellen.....	" 1682 " 1700
Johannes Schenck.....	" 1700 " 1711
Jan Gancell.....	" 1711 " 1719
Adrian Hegeman.....	" 1719 " 1741
Jores Remsen	" 1741 " 1762
Petrus Van Steenburgh.....	" 1762 " 1773
Anthony Welp	" 1773 " 1776
Gabriel Ellison	" 1776 " 1790
John Rubell.....	" 1790 " 1793
Michael Schoonmaker	" 1793 " 1798
Patrick Dillon.....	" 1798 " —
Patrick Noon.....	" — " 1802 ¹

¹ Strong's Hist. of Flatbush, p. 100 *et seq.*

It appears, as already shown in connection with the Dutch period, that one Reinier was schoolmaster in 1661¹; and we also find that a patent for 1426 acres of land, in Flatbush, was granted March 21, 1677, to sundry persons, thirty-five in number, among whom was "Rem Remse, the schoolmaster for the time being, in his official capacity."² These two names, therefore, seem also entitled to a place in the foregoing list of schoolmasters of Flatbush.

Hon. Teunis G. Bergen, of Bay Ridge, Kings county, has favored us with the following statements in regard to some of the persons mentioned in Dr. Strong's list:

Adriaen Hegeman, the first schoolmaster of Flatbush [of whom a biographical sketch is given in the "Annals" of the Dutch period, p. 49], was also, from 1670 to 1671, vendue master of the Dutch towns of Kings county. . . . Hegeman's descendants are as yet numerous in Flatbush, and Kings county.

Francays d'Bruynne, schoolmaster prior to his settlement in Flatbush, owned Antony Jansen van Salee's patent of 100 morgen on the extreme west end of Long Island, lying partly in New Utrecht and partly in Gravesend.

Michil Hainelle, schoolmaster, owned a farm (as well as being a schoolmaster).

Jan Gerritsen Van Marcken, schoolmaster, finally quarrelled with the church authorities and was dismissed. (Have somewhere among my papers considerable relating to this quarrel.)

Schoolmasters Dirck Storm, Johannes Van Ekelen and Johannes Schenk's facsimiles of signature accompany this. From the facsimiles you will see that Strong errs in the spelling of names. The spellings I have given above are the correct ones.

* * * * *

"Know of no male descendants of De Bruynne, Hainelle, Van Marcken, Van Ekelen or De Baene, in Kings county. Storm, Schenk (now generally spelled Schenck), and De Beavois, of Brooklyn, have numerous descendants in the county."

* * * * *

Know of no manuscript records on the subject except those you have referred to.

* * * * *

Dr. Strong's narrative continues:

Specific and very particular agreements were made with the several schoolmasters, which are entered at large upon the town records. It may be interesting to present one or two of these, to show the duties which these persons formerly were required to perform, and the manner in which they were to instruct the children. The fol-

¹ Albany Records, xix, 95.

² Book of Patents (MS.), in office of Secretary of State, iv, 165.

lowing is a translation of the agreement made with Johannes Van Eckkelen, who commenced his duties as schoolmaster, in Flatbush, in the year 1682:

"Johannes Van Eckkelen, a young man from New Albany, is hereby called and accepted, on the first day of October, 1681, with the advice and consent of the Honorable Magistrates, to perform the duties heretofore required of Jan Thibaud, in manner following: (1.) He shall serve the Church and School, according to the existing ordinances, in the same manner as they have been heretofore performed by the above named Jan Thibaud, and as hereunder written. (2.) This contract shall take effect from the first day of October, Inst., and continue to the first day of May next, for the purpose of making a trial of each other in the meantime. (3.) For the performance of the above duties, he shall be entitled to receive the sum of 234 guilders, in grain, valued in Seewant, with the other privileges appertaining to the calling during the time specified."

ARTICLES OF AGREEMENT

WITH

JOHANNES VAN ECKKELEN,

Accepted Schoolmaster and Chorister of Flatbush.

School Service.—I. The school shall begin at eight o'clock, and go out at eleven; and in the afternoon shall begin at one o'clock and end at four. The bell shall be rung when the school commences.¹

II. When the school begins, one of the children shall read the morning prayer, as it stands in the catechism, and close with the prayer before dinner; in the afternoon it shall begin with the prayer after dinner, and end with the evening prayer. The evening school shall begin with the Lord's prayer, and close by singing a psalm.

III. He shall instruct the children on every Wednesday and Saturday in the common prayers, and the questions and answers in the catechism, to enable them to repeat them the better on Sunday before the afternoon service, or on Monday, when they shall be catechised before the congregation. Upon all such occasions, the schoolmaster shall be present, and shall require the children to be friendly in their appearance, and encourage them to answer freely and distinctly.

IV. He shall be required to keep his school nine months in succession, from September to June, in each year, in case it should be concluded upon to retain his services for a year or more, or without limitation; and he shall be required to be regulated by these articles, and to perform the same duties which his predecessor, Jan Thibaud, above named, was required to perform. In every particular therefore, he shall be required to keep school, according to this seven months agreement, and shall always be present himself.

¹ The bell used on these occasions was the church bell. The practice of ringing this bell at the opening of the school continued till the year 1794, when the second church was taken down. The church bell was also used by the Academy for nearly ten years. (Dr. Strong.)

Church Service.—I. He shall keep the church clean, and ring the bell three times before the people assemble to attend the preaching and catechism. Also before the sermon is commenced, he shall read a chapter out of the Holy Scriptures, and that between the second and third ringing of the bell. After the third ringing he shall read the ten commandments, and the twelve articles of our faith, and then take the lead in singing. In the afternoon after the third ringing of the bell, he shall read a short chapter, or one of the Psalms of David, as the congregation are assembling, and before divine service commences, shall introduce it, by the singing of a Psalm or Hymn.

II. When the minister shall preach at Brooklin or New Utrecht, he shall be required to read twice before the congregation, from the book commonly used for that purpose. In the afternoon he shall also read a sermon on the explanation of the catechism, according to the usage and practice approved by the minister. The children as usual, shall recite their questions and answers out of the catechism, on Sunday, and he shall instruct them therein. He, as chorister, shall not be required to perform these duties, whenever divine service shall be performed in Flatlands, as it would be unsuitable, and prevent many from attending there.

III. For the administration of Holy Baptism, he shall provide a basin with water, for which he shall be entitled to receive from the parents, or witnesses, twelve styvers. He shall, at the expense of the church, provide bread and wine, for the celebration of the Holy Supper; He shall be in duty bound promptly to furnish the minister with the name of the child to be baptized, and with the names of the parents and witnesses. And he shall also serve as messenger for the consistory.

IV. He shall give the funeral invitations, dig the grave; and toll the bell, for which service he shall receive for a person of fifteen years and upward, twelve guilders, and for one under that age, eight guilders. If he should be required to give invitations beyond the limits of the town, he shall be entitled to three additional guilders, for the invitation of every other town, and if he should be required to cross the river, and go to New York, he shall receive four guilders.

School Money.—He shall receive from those who attend the day school, for a speller or reader, three guilders a quarter, and for a writer, four guilders. From those who attend evening school, for a speller or reader, four guilders, and for a writer, six guilders shall be given.

Salary.—In addition to the above, his salary shall consist of four hundred guilders, in grain, valued in Seewant, to be delivered at Brooklyn Ferry, and for his services from October to May, as above stated, a sum of two hundred and thirty-four guilders, in the same kind, with the dwelling house, barn, pasture lot and meadows, to the school appertaining. The same to take effect from the first day of October, Instant.

Done and agreed upon in Consistory, under the inspection of the Honorable Constable and Overseers, the 8th of October, 1682.

CONSTABLE AND OVERSEERS.

CORNELIUS BERRIAN.
 RYNIER AERTSEN.
 JAN REMSEN.

THE CONSISTORY.

CASPARUS VAN ZUREN, Minister.
 ADRIAEN REYERSE.
 CORNELIUS BARENT VANDWYCK.

I agree to the above articles, and promise to perform them to the best of my ability.

JOHANNES VAN ECKKELEN.

Mr. Henry Onderdonk, Jr., has furnished a newspaper copy of an agreement with Jan Tiebout, similar to but not identical with Van Eckelen's. He adds: "It has a misprint that I can't decipher. I have underscored the line: *fore-noon house rule*."

ARTICLES OF AGREEMENT with Jan Thobald or Tibout, employed Schoolmaster and Reader for Flatbush, made on the 18th Dec., 1681.

RELATING TO THE SCHOOL.

1. The school to begin at 8 o'clock and be dismissed at 11 in the A. M.; at 1 o'clock and dismissed at 4 in the P. M. The bell to be rung by the Teacher at the opening of the school.

2. On the opening of the school in the A. M., one of the children to read the morning prayer as contained in the catechism, and at its closing the prayer before eating; at the opening in the P. M., the prayer after eating, and [at] its closing the evening prayer. The evening school to begin with the Lord's prayer and to close with one of the psalms of David.

3. He shall require the children in the evenings to learn the ordinary prayers, together with the catechism, and on Wednesdays and Saturdays hear their recitations of the same; also on Sundays prior to the P. M. service, so that they may be prepared to recite on Mondays before the congregation, at which recitation he is to be present. He must conduct himself orderly and soberly, and have patience with the children, to the end that he may learn them as in duty bound.

RELATING TO CHURCH SERVICE.

1st. He shall keep the church clean, and ring the bell three times to bring the congregation together for preaching or chatecising on Sundays before service, to read a chapter in the Bible between the second and third ringing; after the third ringing to read the ten commandments and the twelve articles of faith; and to lead in all the singing. In the afternoon, after the third ringing, to read a short chapter out of the Psalms of David, while the congregation are gathering together, so as to have them enter with a Christian song.

2nd. When the ministers turn is to preach at Brooklyn or New Utrecht, he will be held to read twice; the books to be used to be in accordance with the *forenoon house rule*; the preaching over, the chatechism to be attended to in the afternoon, the children to be gathered together and to answer from the Sunday lesson; he will be

¹ Strong's Hist. of Flatbush, pp. 110-114.

excused from the above service when the preaching is at Flatlands, for then it will be unnecessary.

3. He shall invite the people to funerals, dig the grave, and ring the bell, for which he shall be entitled to 12 guilders for persons of 15 years old and upwards, and 8 guilders for those under. When called to act outside his town on Long Island, to be entitled to three guilders in addition; and when acting in New York or across the river 4 guilders.

Mr. Onderdonk's newspaper article further states:

Tibout was a successor of Jan Gerritsz Van Marken, the latter being one of the early schoolmasters of Flatbush, and readers of the 4 Dutch towns, whose salary was 350 guilders. Gerritsz was discharged for slandering Van Zuuren the Minister, for frequenting the tavern and neglecting the Church orders.

The yearly compensation of Tibout, the schoolmaster and reader, was 400 guilders, zeewands value, in corn, delivered at the ferry in Brooklyn; he was also entitled to the use of the dwelling house provided for the teacher, about an acre of tillable land, a pasture field and salt meadow lot belonging to the school.

The price of tuition was fixed at 3 guilders a quarter in the day school, for reading and spelling; including writing, 4 guilders; in the evening school, for reading and spelling, 4 guilders; including writing, 6 guilders. A guilder is 40 cents.

We are likewise indebted to Mr. Onderdonk for the following extracts from the account book of Jno. Bowne, of Flushing:

SCHOOL BILLS.

1680 $\frac{1}{4}$.	Reckoned with Hugh and Elizabeth Cowperthwaite and then left due about work [by him] and schooling [by her]	£1	1	0
1681 $\frac{1}{2}$.	Reckoned with Elizabeth Cowperthwaite about schooling and diet for children & rests due her	£0	17	6
	More since for schooling	0	12	0
		£1	9	6
1683.	Martha Johanna did begin school on a new acct, $\frac{3}{4}$, upon an agreement for 30 weeks for schooling and what else, which is paid for by a red petticoat ¹ , bought of Jn ^o Broke.			

¹ Money (coin or paper) was little used, but barter took its place.

1692 $\frac{1}{2}$ Jn^o Arcut [Arsocot?], Cr.

By my promise for one year school[ing]	£1	1	0
By some writing done for me	0	10	0
For John, his last schooling, 4 months	0	6	2
For William's children	0	12	0
For John, one quarter	0	4	6
	£2	13	8

1693 $\frac{1}{2}$ Wm. Richardson's estate, Dr.

Paid to Jn ^o Urquhart for the 3 boys school- ing at 5s. each	£0	15	0
By four weeks' diet for the 2 oldest sons, Wm. and Thomas, and for John, 7 weeks, at 2s. 6d	1	17	6
More for schooling to Urquhart	0	8	9

The following memoranda were also furnished by Mr. Onderdonk:

1685. Goody Davis keeps school at Jamaica, in Jn^o Rodes' little house which is to be removed for a shop.

Rachel Spencer taught school at Hempstead, died 1687.

1695. Isaac Selover was schoolmaster and foresinger at Flatlands.

The "Rachel Spencer" above mentioned seems to have been the first schoolmistress on record in the province.

It having been repeatedly observed, in the annals of the Dutch period, that all private schoolmasters were required to be duly licensed by the civil and ecclesiastical authorities, we have occasion now to remark that this requirement, in substance, was continued and enforced by the English; Governor Dongan, and at least three of his successors, having been regularly instructed on this point, in connection with other subjects. We quote as follows:

Instructions to Governor Dongan. Given at Windsor May 29th, 1686.

* * * * *

38. And wee doe further direct that noe Schoolmaster bee henceforth permitted to come from England & to keep school within Our Province of New York without the license of the said Archbishop of Canterbury; And that noe other person now there or that shall come from other parts, bee admitted to keep school without your license first had.¹

* * * * *

Similar instructions were given to Governor Sloughter, Jan. 31, 1689,² to the Earl of Bellomont, Aug. 31, 1697,³ and to Governor Hunter, Dec. 27th, 1709,⁴ except that the Bishop of London, instead

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., iii, 372.

² N. Y. Col. Doc., iii, 688.

³ N. Y. Col. Doc., iv, 288.

⁴ N. Y. Col. Doc., iv, 187.



of the Archbishop of Canterbury, was named in each of these cases.

In regard to this subject, Mr. Henry Onderdonk, Jr., has advised us that "the licensing of schoolmasters originated in a law of Parliament, in England, who feared Popish priests and Jesuits might assume the guise of teachers to disseminate their principles more insidiously among unsuspecting pupils."

The "law of Parliament" thus referred to, seems to be that designated as 13 and 14 Car. II, c. 4, entitled "An act for the Uniformity of public Prayers, and Administration of Sacraments, and other Rites and Ceremonies; and for establishing the Form of making, ordaining, and consecrating Bishops, Priests, and Deacons, in the Church of *England*." Section VIII of this act provides:

* * Every School-Master keeping any public or private school, and every Person instructing or teaching any Youth in any House or private Family as a Tutor or School-master, who upon the first Day of *May* which shall be in the Year of our Lord God One thousand six hundred sixty-two, or at any Time thereafter, shall be Incumbent or have Possession of any . . . School, or shall instruct or teach any Youth as Tutor or School-master, shall . . . subscribe the Declaration or Acknowledgment following, *scilicet* :

IX. [I, *A. B.*, do declare, That it is not lawful upon any Pretence whatsoever to take Arms against the King; and that I do abhor that traiterous Position of taking Arms by His Authority against His Person, or against those that are commissioned by him]; and that I will conform to the Liturgy of the Church of *England*, as it is now by Law established: And I do declare, That I do hold there lies no Obligation upon me or on any other Person, from the Oath commonly called The Solemn League and Covenant, to endeavour any Change or Alteration of Government either in Church or State; and that the same was in itself an unlawful Oath, and imposed upon the Subjects of this Realm against the known Laws and Liberties of this Kingdom.

* * * * *

XI. And if any School-master, or other Person, instructing or teaching Youth in any private House or Family as a Tutor or School-master, shall instruct or teach any Youth as a Tutor or School-master before Licence obtained from his respective Archbishop, Bishop or Ordinary of the Diocese, according to the Laws and Statutes of this Realm (for which he shall pay twelve Pence only) and before such Subscription and Acknowledgment made as aforesaid; then every such School-master and other, instructing and teaching as aforesaid, shall for the first Offence suffer three Months Imprisonment without Bail or Mainprize; and for every second and other such Offence, shall

suffer three Months Imprisonment without Bail or Mainprize, and also forfeit to His Majesty the Sum of five Pounds: * *

The act 19 Geo. III, c. 44, modified the provisions of the foregoing statute in favor of Protestant dissenters. as follows:

II. * * No Dissenting Minister, nor any other Protestant dissenting from the Church of *England*, who shall take the aforesaid Oaths, and make and subscribe the above mentioned Declaration against Popery, and the Declaration hereinbefore mentioned, shall be prosecuted in any Court whatsoever, for teaching and instructing Youth as a Tutor or Schoolmaster, any Law or Statute to the contrary notwithstanding.

* * * * *

The subject of education, like many other matters of vital importance to the welfare of the people, is scarcely noticed by some standard historians. We had confidently expected that Smith's celebrated "History of the late province of New York, from its Discovery to the appointment of Governor Colden in 1762," would contain frequent allusions which would be of service in the present narrative; but thus far, we find only an incidental mention of the establishment of a Latin school, in the following paragraph:

* * * * *

[1688.]—While these things were transacting in Canada, a scene of the greatest importance was opening at New York. A general disaffection to the government prevailed among the people. Papists began to settle in the colony under the smiles of the governor [Dongan]. The collector of the revenues, and several principal officers, threw off the mask, and openly avowed their attachment to the doctrines of Rome. A Latin school was set up, and the teacher strongly suspected for a Jesuit.¹

* * * * *

With reference to this Latin school, we find the following additional particulars brought to light by the researches of Mr. John M. Shea:

* * * * *

Father Henry Harrison, S. J., was in N. York in 1685, and returned to Ireland in 1690, and in Maryland in 1697. Father Charles Gage, S. J., was also employed there in 1686 and 7. It is very possible that these two last named may have been sent by Dongan to carry out his promise, and that one of them may have opened the very suspicious Latin school, which Smith surmises was kept by a Jesuit.²

¹ Smith's Hist. of N. Y. (N. Y. Hist. Soc., Ed., 1829), i., 90.

² N. Y. Doc. Hist., iii, 73 (4th ed.); 110 (8th ed.).

We find no further mention of this school, except in a letter dated April 13, 1699, from the Earl of Bellomont, then governor of the province, to the Lords of Trade, to wit :

* * * * *

Mr. Attorney Generall assures me that in Colonel Dongan's time, he, to make his court to King James desired this Farm, . . . the Governor's demesne called the King's farm, . . . might be appropriated to the maintenance of a Jesuit school; but King James (bigot tho' he was) refused, saying that he would not have his Governors deprived of their conveniences.¹

According to Dr. Strong,² Johannes Van Eckelen [Ekelen] officiated as schoolmaster from 1682 to 1700, though it appears, from the annexed documents, that his license was revoked in 1691, in favor of Johannes Schenck [Schenk], whom Dr. Strong considers Van Eckelen's successor from the year 1700 to 1711. Whether the order of the council was not carried into effect, or whether the above named author is in error in regard to these dates, does not appear.

To the honor^{ble} Major Richard Ingoldsby, Comander in chief of their Majesties Province of New York, &c.

The humble Request of Rodolphus Varick, minister, and Joseph Hegeman, elder of the dutch Church in flatbush,

Humbly sheweth :

That in the late Rebellion Joannes Van Eckelen the then clerk and schoolmaster of flatbush hath always bin a very great zealot for the faction of Leisler &c., as may appear to y^r hon^r y^rself having taken letters out of his pocket at the citty hall which he was carrying to Leisler into the fort, and was very active in raising men in the country to withstand their majesties forces.

Especially the afores^d Joanes Van Eckelen hath bin alwayes opposing the minister and church council in their endeavors for supporting the Government for the Crown of England and inticing people to the party of Leisler contrary to all their admonitions, publicly defaming the afores^d minister, setting the common people against him, offering his service to drag him out of his house by violence to a pretended court as also procuring the apprehension and fining of the afores^d elder for above thirty pounds because he endeavored to have hindred their committing hostilities on the English towns on long Island.

Upon thes considerations and others to long to rehearse, besides other complaints as to his service in the afores^d office, the church council did dismisse the afores^d Joanes van Ekelen and did forbid him more to officiate, but choose in his place one Joannes Schenck a fitter person and wel affected to the present government,

Now y^r petition^{rs} give y^r honour to understand that s^d Joanes van Ekelen hath clandestinely and without any of their knowledge pro-

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., iv., 490

² Hist. of Flatbush, p. 109.

cured a licence from y^r honour, whereby he again sets up school in defiance of their church and accustomed priviledges, refusing to obey the civil power but dayly affronting them whereby he drawes many of the late faction to his side to the manifest Scandal of their majesties present government and since it hath never bin accustomed to have two Schoolmasters in that small town heretofore y^r petition^{rs} humbly pray y^r honor that s^d Joanes van Ekelen may be forbid farther to teach school in flatbush and that y^r honour would please to authorize Joanes Schenck to be the onely schoolmaster there, for the reasons above s^d, and y^r petition^{rs} shall ever pray for y^r hon^{rs} health and happinesse.

JOSEPH HEGEMAN, *Elder*. RODOLPHUS VARICK.¹

The foregoing petition bears no date, but was submitted to the council Sept. 26, 1691, as appears from the following minute. The petition is indorsed "*granted,*" with which the council minute agrees :

At a council held at ffort William Henry the 26th of September, 1691.

Present, [* * etc.,]

* * * * *

Upon Reading the Petition of Rodolphus Varick & Others, setting forth their want of an honest schoolmaster Recommending Johannes Schenck as a person qualified & fitt for that Office in flatbush Ordered that sd Schenck be admitted the only schoolmaster of flatbush any former ord^r or warrant to any oy^r² person whatsoever notwithstanding.³

* * * * *

Mr. Bergen, from whom we have already quoted, further states :

The first schoolmaster in New Utrecht of whom I have seen any account, is Joost De Baene.

After Gov. Leisler's Execution, Domine Varick and Jacques Corteyou petitioned the Governor to have Joost De Baene retained as teacher in New Utrecht ; Myndert Coerten having threatened to turn him out of his place as schoolmaster and Reader or Prelector, because he would not side with the Leisler party. Coerten's adherents finally compelled De Baene to leave the place. From De Baene's serving as clerk of the town from 1686 to 1698, it may fairly be inferred that he taught the school during that period, and perhaps a short time longer. Have seen no account of De Baene's successors.

The petition above referred to, of which the following is a copy, is preserved among the manuscripts in the office of the Secretary of

¹ N. Y. Col. MSS., xxxviii, 4.

² A curious abbreviation for "*other*," which is explained by the fact that *h* was formerly written somewhat like the lower part of long *s*; so that *th*, as in "*other*" came to be written (by omitting to cross the *t* and other contractions) very nearly like *y*.

³ Council Minutes (MS., in office of Sec'y of State), vi, 55.

State. It bears no date, but was laid before the Council July 16, 1692.

To the Right Honn^{ble} Maj^r Richard Ingoldsbey Esq^r., Command^r in Chief of the Province of N. Yorke, and the honn^{ble} Council.

The humble Petition of Jaques Cortlejour Justice of the peace and Rudolphus Varick minister of the Gospel in Kings County,

Humble Shewith

That in the time of the Late disorders within y^e Province one Meyndert Coerten lately attainted of high Treason was marching with some ill men from New Utrecht towards the fort ag^t the Kings forces, under your honn^d Command who then did threaten Joost De Baane y^e Schoolmaster & reader of said towne to turne him out of that Imploy because he refused to side with them in theire Rebellion, and although the said Justice and minister since that time have endeavored to hinder the same yet neverthelesse some of those ill affected persons without any cause given, but in contempt of the authority, have forced the said Joost de Baane to forsake the place, altho y^e land out of which the Schoolmaster and Reader of y^e Towne is maintained, was given to the Towne, by the said Justice, out of his proper estate.

Wherefore the Petit^{rs} have thought it their Duty to become humble Suppliants in the behalfe of y^e Said Joost de Baane, humble offering to your honn^{rs} that it would tend much to y^e peace & quiet of the said Towne that your honn^{rs} would be pleased to order, that y^e Said Joost d Baane be continued in the said Imploy as Schoolmaster & Reader of the said Towne, and that he be allowed his Salary as formerly from the 14th of aprill last, Since which time he was Causeles turned out.

And your Petit^{rs} shall Ever Pray.¹

The record of the action of the Council is as follows:

At a Council held at ffort William Henry the 16th of July 1692,

* * * * *

Vpon reading of the Petition of Jaquis Cortilian [Corteljon] and Rodolphus Varick on behalf of Joost De Bane [Baene] schoolmaster of New Utrecht in Ks County,

Resolved That A Lysence be granted unto the said Joost De Bane to be schoolmaster of New Vtrecht, and that he is intituled to and Ought to receive the salary belonging to the Reader and school Master of sd Towne from the 14th of Aprill last and the Justices be wrote to and required to suffer none other to Officiate in the quality of a schoolmaster in the sd Towne without a Lycense from the Government nor in the quality of Reader but by the appointment of the Minister.²

* * * * *

We are indebted to Wm. S. Pelletreau, Esq., of Southampton, L. I., for the following statement:

¹ N. Y. Col.-MSS., xxxviii, 154.

² Council Minutes (MS.), vi, 111.

1694. Mr. John Moubray was engaged to teach a school from the 1st day of May till the 1st of November for 12 shillings per scholar. He had 22 pupils. From that time there appears to have been a school more or less regular until the present time.¹

The records of this town [Southampton, L. I.] are the most perfect of any in the State, and well repay examination.

Thus far, the licenses to teach school have uniformly been issued by the authority of the Colonial officers; but we now find one granted by municipal authority, as early as January, 1700, at the present capital of the State:

* * * * *

Att a meeting of y^e Mayor, Aldermen and Common Council held in y^e Citty Hall of Albany, y^e 23d. of January 1700.

The request of Cornelis Bogardus by y^e mouth of Mr. Will^m de Meyer to be admitted a schoolmaster for y^e Citty is taken into consideration and unanimously doe graunt y^e same, as also a freeman of this Citty upon his arrivall.²

During the same year (1700), Governor Bellomont proposed to have some of the Indian children instructed at the public expense, as appears from the annexed records:

Conference of the Earl of Bellomont with the Indians, at Albany, August 29, 1700.

* * * * *

The Earl of Belomont says upon the reply of the Five Nations yesterday to his Lordship's propositions the day before, as follows:

* * * * *

In answer to your desire of a Minister here in Albany, to instruct you in the Christian religion, I am not only willing but glad to gratify you therein, and I will engage Mr. Lydius the Minister of this town to take paines with you and learn your language that he may be the better able to serve you in the work of the gospell, and I hope in a little time to have the Bible translated into your language and to have some of your children taught to read, so that you may have the comfort and edification of God's Word, which I am sure will be hugely pleasing to you when your children are able to read it to you. Now that I am upon this subject, I wish you would send two or three Sachems sonns out of each Nation to be kept at School at New York where I will take care to have them taught to write and read both English and Indian, and they shall be well clothed and dyeted at the King's charge and after three or four yeares that they are perfect in their writing & reading they shall return home to you and other boyes shall come in their places; by which meanes you will always have those among you that will understand English and will be serviceable to you upon many occasions.³

* * * * *

¹ See, also, Howell's Hist. of Southampton, p. 141.

² Munsell's Annals, iv, 106. ³ N. Y. Col. Doc., iv, 734.

The following partial replies were given by Sadeganaktie, the speaker at the next day's conference :

* * * * *

As to that head relating to our children's being instructed to read and write English and Indian at New York, the Sachems that are now on the hill are consulting about it, and wee will when wee are all conven'd together, return your Lordship our answer.¹

* * * * *

After a while a Message being come from the Hill from the other Sachems of the Five Nations, and the Speaker sayd as follows:

* * * * *

As to our children to be sent to New York to bee instructed to read and write, wee answer that wee are not masters or disposers of them; that is a matter that relates to our wives, who are the sole disposers of their children while they are under age.²

We have not observed any record as to the manner in which the above proposition was received by the Indian women, or whether it was actually communicated to them.

The earliest legislative act in behalf of education passed within the colony of New York, if we mistake not, is that entitled "An Act for Encouragement of a Grammar Free-School in the City of New York," bearing date Nov. 27, 1702. This act expired seven years later, by its own limitation, and having thus become obsolete before any of the extant collections of laws were printed, only its title appears in such standard compilations as Livingston and Smith's.³ Indeed, we have failed to find a printed copy in the State Library or elsewhere, and have been obliged to make our transcript from the original copy of the act, as filed in the office of the Secretary of State. The same remark applies to the several subsequent acts passed prior to 1750.

AN ACT for encouragement of A Grammar Free-School in the City of New York.

The Mayor, Aldermen and Comonalty of the City of New York having Represented unto the General Assembly of this Province the great Necessity there is of having a Free-School in the said City, for the Educacon and Instruction of youth and male Children; That such Pious and Necessary work may receive due encouragement, *Be it Enacted by his Excellency the Governour and Council and Representatives Convened in General Assembly, and by Authority of the Same,* that there shall be hereafter Elected, Chosen, Lycensed,

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., iv, 737.

² N. Y. Col. Doc., iv, 738.

³ See chap. cxx, p. 51.

Authorized, and appointed one able Skilfull and Orthodox person to be School-Master; for the Education and Instruction of youth and Male Children of such Parents as are of *French* and *Dutch Extraction*, as well as of the *English*, may come and be Instructed in the Languages or other Learning usually taught in Grammar Schools, And for the Encouragement of such School-Master, *Be it further Enacted by the Authority aforesaid*, That henceforward Annually there shall be in the said City Assessed, Levyed, Collected and paid for the space or term of seven years, the Sum of fifty pounds Current money of New York for the maintenance of the said School-Master, which said Sum of fifty pounds shall be Assessed, Levyed, Collected and paid by such persons, at such times, in such Manner and proportions, and under such penaltyes Respectively as is provided for the Assessing, Levyng, Collecting and paying of the Sum of one hundred pounds *p. ann.* for the Minister of New York, by an Act of Assembly Intituled, an Act for Settling a Ministry, and Raising a Maintenance for them in the City of New York, County of Richmond, West Chester and Queens County, made in the fourth Year of King *William* and Queen *Mary*, *Provided always*, That such School-Master shall, from time to time, as a Vacancy happens be Chosen and Recommended by the Comon Council of the said City for the time being in order to be Lycensed and approved by the Right Honble the Bishop of London or the Governor or Comander in Chief of this province for the time being any thing herein Contained to the contrary thereof in any ways notwithstanding.

City of New York, Die Jovis, 2h. P. M., 1st Nov., 1702 In the first year of her Matys Reign.

House of Representatives for the Province of New York.
This Bill having been read three times, Resolved

This Bill do passe.

Py order of the House of Representatives,

W. NICOLL *Speaker*

27th November, 1702

This Bill having been read three times is passed the Council.

By order of Council,

27th November 1702

B. COZENS *C of Council*

I assent to this Bill Enacting it and ordering it to be enrolled

CORNBURY

[Endorsed] Die Jovis 1st Nov^r 1702

This Bill having been read three times Is passed and Ordered to be sent up to the Council for their concurrence.

GAB L. LUDLOW *Jr. Cl*

to ye Gener. Assembly.

The official history of the passage of the foregoing act, as derived from the Journals of the General Assembly and the Council, is deemed worthy of insertion in this place, as furnishing valuable information relative to the men and the measures of that period, in con-

nection with the subject under consideration. In further justification of these quotations (if any be needed), we adopt the language of the Preface to the Assembly Journal itself, to wit:

Although the Votes and Proceedings of the General Assembly of this Colony, may perhaps appear to some, as Matter of little Moment; the same were nevertheless regarded by the General Assembly, as a thing of so much Consequence, that by a Resolution of the House on the Eighth day of *January*, One Thousand Seven Hundred and Sixty-two, they empowered me to get them reprinted.

* * * * *

ABRAHAM LOTT Jun^r.

New York, *September 1, 1764.*

We may add that this set of Journals covers a period of about seventy-five years, beginning with 1691, and makes two large folio volumes, which were printed by Hugh Gaine; also, that two volumes of about the same size, containing the Journals of the Legislative Council, for nearly the same period, were printed as lately as 1861, by order of the Senate of this State. Certain deficiencies in the Assembly Journals have been restored only within a few years, after much pains-taking on the part of Mr. George H. Moore, Librarian of the New York Historical Society, from whom the State Library has acquired a manuscript copy, through the Regents of the University. These volumes of Journals are a mine of information on all matters connected with the legislation of the Colony, and it cannot be amiss to bring to light, now and then, passages on special subjects, which might not otherwise be seen by one in a thousand of the people of this State. Besides, for historical purposes, the series of agencies and events which culminate in the passage of an act, is sometimes of greater interest and importance than the act itself; just as, to borrow an illustration from Coleridge, "the history of a *word* may be more instructive than that of a campaign."

In Governor Cornbury's Address to the General Assembly of the Province of New York at the opening of the Session, at Jamaica, Queens county, on the 20th day of Oct., 1702, he remarks:

There are some other Things, I think it my Duty to recommend you, particularly "the preparing a good Bill, for the better reglating the Militia of this Province, another for the erecting of public schools in proper Places, another for appointing a convenient Number of fit Persons, to examine and state the publick Accounts and Debts of this Province;"—

to which recommendations he adds:

* * "these and all other Bills, which shall appear to be necessary

to be passed Into Acts, for the good of this Country, and for the Preservation and Encouragement of the people, shall always find a ready Compliance from me."

The foregoing subjects were taken up, from time to time, by the General Assembly, that of defense being first, finance second, and education third, in the order of their consideration, though the last was reached within ten days of the opening of the session. The first record, as to action on this subject, is in the following terms:

Die Veneris,¹ 8 ho. A. M. Oct. 30, 1702.

A motion being made, and the Question being put, whether there should be erected a publick Free-School. It was carried in the Affirmative.

Ordered, That Major Jackson,² do acquaint the Town of *Hampstead*, that a publick Free-School is designed to be erected, and to inquire of them, what Encouragement they will allow towards the same, within the Bounds of that Township; and that he make Report thereof to the House *Friday* next.

* * * * *

Die Veneris, 8 ho. A. M. Nov. 6, 1702.

* * * * *

Major Jackson, according to Order, reported from the Township of *Hampstead*, at a general Town Meeting, for Encouragement of a Free-School, to be erected in the Township, they do grant 100 Acres of Land, with Conveniences of Watering near the *East Meadow Point*, and also allow Liberty for Timber for Building, Fencing and Firewood, with other Conveniences, to be had within the Township, according to a Town Act; to build a Free-School on the said 100 Acres of Land.

* * * * *

Die Martis, 3 ho. P. M. Nov. 10, 1702.

* * * * *

A Motion being made, and the Question being put, That the City and County of *New York*, have Leave to bring in a Bill, to raise *Fifty Pounds per Annum*, for a Free-School, and it was carried in the Affirmative.

¹ As this ancient method of indicating the day of the week has become nearly or quite obsolete in this country, though still used in the British Parliament, we append the Latin equivalents of the English names:

Sunday.....	<i>Die Solis.</i>
Monday.....	<i>Die Lunæ.</i>
Tuesday.....	<i>Die Martis.</i>
Wednesday.....	<i>Die Mercurij (ij=ii).</i>
Thursday.....	<i>Die Jovis.</i>
Friday.....	<i>Die Veneris.</i>
Saturday.....	<i>Die Sabatij.</i>

² John Jackson, a representative from Queens county.

Ordered, That Mr. *French* and Mr. *De Lancey*,¹ do prepare and bring in a Bill accordingly.

* * * * *

Die Sabatii, 8 ho. A. M. Nov. 14, 1702.

Mr. *French*, presented to the House a Bill, entitled, *An Act to enable the Mayor, Alderman and Commonalty of the City of New-York to raise Fifty Pounds per Annum, for seven Years, towards maintaining a School Master, within the said City of New York.*

Ordered, The Bill be read.

A Bill entitled, *An Act* [etc., as above], was read the first time.

Ordered, That the Bill be read the second Time.

* * * * *

Die Martis, 8 ho. A. M. Nov. 17, 1702.

[At New York City, by adjournment from Jamaica.]

* * * * *

The Bill entitled, *An Act to enable the Mayor* [etc., as above], was read the second Time.

Ordered, The Bill be committed to Mr. *French*, Mr. *Cortlandt*,² Capt *Garton*³ Mr. *Abeel*⁴ and Major *Whitehead*,⁵ or any Three of them.

* * * * *

Die Jovis, 8 ho. A. M. Nov. 19, 1702.

* * * * *

Mr. *French*, reported from the Committee, to whom the Bill, entitled, *An Act for Encouragement of an English Free-School, in the City of New York*, was committed, That they had considered the same, and made some amendments; which they had directed him to report to the House, which was read and agreed to by the House.

Ordered, The Bill be engrossed with the amendments.

* * * * *

Die Jovis, 2 ho. P. M. Nov. 19, 1702.

The Bill, entitled, *An Act* [etc., as last above quoted], was read the third time,

Resolved, The Bill do pass.

Ordered, Mr. *French* and Major *Whitehead*, do carry up the Bill to the Council, for their concurrence.

* * * * *

At a Council held at ffort W^m Henry, this 19th day of November, 1702.

PRESENT—His Excellency, EDWARD Viscount CORNBURY, &c.,

SA: SH: BROUGHTON,

GERRARD BEEKMAN,

RIP VAN DAM,

CALEB HEATHCOTE, Esq^r

JOHN BRIDGES, Do^r of Laws.

* * * * *

¹ Philip French and Stephen De Lancey, both representatives from the city and county of New York.

² Jacobus Cortlandt, of New York.

³ Thomas Garton, of Ulster.

⁴ John Abeel, of Albany.

⁵ Daniel Whitehead, of Queens.

His Excellency layd before this board a Bill for Encouragement of a Grammar Free Schooll in the City of New York which was Dd to him by members of the house of Representatives appointed to do the same which was read the first and second time and comitted to the members of this board or any three of them.

* * * * *

On the next day, the same members being present, with the exception of Mr. Beekman, and the addition of W^m Smith :—

Coll^o W^m Smith Chairman of the Committee of the Council to whom the Bill for Encouragement of a Grammar Free Schooll in the City of New York was Comitted by this board for Report does humbly offer to his Excellency that upon perusal of that part of his Excellencies Instructions relating to School masters within this Colony In the words following: That no School master be permitted to come from England and to keep a school within this province without the License of the *Right Reverend* ffather in God, Henry Lord Bishop of London and that no person now there or that shall come from other parts be admitted to keep Schooll without your Lycense first obtained We are humbly of opinion that his Excellency ought not to passe the said Bill otherwise than is directed by that Clause of his Excellencies Instruction and that it be Recommended to the house of Representatives to make such amendments in the said Bill as is agreeable thereunto And

Ordered, that Coll^o Hatcote do carry the same.

* * * * *

[In General Assembly.]

Die Martis, 2 ho. P. M. Nov. 24, 1702.

A Message from his Excellency and Council, by Col. *Heathcote*, with the Bill, entitled, *An Act* [etc., as above.]

That his Excellency ought not to pass the said Bill, otherwise than is directed by his Instructions, and that it be recommended to the House of Representatives, to make such Amendments to the said Bill, agreeable thereto.

After some Debate on the Message, the House ordered Mr. *French* and Mr. *Willet*,¹ to return the said Bill to the Council, and acquaint his Excellency, That the House had sent the Bill, for settling a Free School, &c. to the Council, and that they may reject or amend the Bill and send it down with the Amendments, and the House will forthwith take the same into Consideration, and dispatch that and other Matters, now before the House.

* * * * *

At a Council, [etc.] Nov. 24th, 1702.

Coll^o W^m Smith Chairman of the Committee of the Council to whom the Bill for encouragement of a Grammar Free Schooll in the City of New York was Recomitted does report to this honorable board.

William Willet of Westchester.

That all be left out after the words [Queen Mary] in the tenth line of the second Sheet and instead thereof the following provisoe to be Inserted—Provided allwayes that such Schooll master if Chosen from England then to be Licensed by the Right Reverend ffather in God the Lord Bishop of London and approved of by the Gov^r or Comander in Chief of this province for the time being and in case any fitt person shall be here found for the discharge of that duty as well as upon any Vacancy that may hereafter happen upon the death absence or disability of such Schooll master that then and in such case the Comon Councill of the City of New York for the time being shall and may Recomend to the Gov^r or Comander in Chief of this province for the time being such fitt person qualified as is aforesaid for License and approbation Which is allwayes to be had and obtained before such School master be Instituted to the Sallary aforesaid any thing herein contained to the Contrary thereof in any wise notwithstanding.

Which Report being read and approved of The said Bill together with the said amendmets being read the third time is passed the Councill and ordered to be sent down to the house of Representatives for their Concurrence to the sd amend^t and M^r Attorney General ordered to carry the same Which was done.

* * * * *

[In General Assembly.]

Die Mercurij, 8 ho. A. M. Nov. 25, 1702.

* * * * *

A Message from the Council, by Mr. Attorney General. That the Council have agreed to the Bill, entitled [as above] with some Amendments, to which they desire the Concurrence of this House,

Resolved, A Conference be desired with the Council, upon the Amendments of the said Bill.

Ordered, That Mr. French do go to the Council, and desire the said Conference.

* * * * *

At a Councill [etc. on the same day]

* * * * *

Phillip French Esq^r from the house of Representatives desires a Conference with the Councill upon the amendmets of the Bill for Incouragement of a Grammar Free Schooll, &c.

The Gentl of the Councill did agree to the sd Conference, and order that Coll^o W^m Smith, Sampson Shelton Broughton Esq^r and Coll^o Caleb Heathcote do manage the same and that they meet the Comittee of the house of Representatives in order thereunto this afternoon between three and four of the Clock at the house of the sd M^r French.

* * * * *

[In General Assembly.]

Die Mercurij, 2 ho. P. M. Nov. 25, 1702.

A Message from the Council, acquainting this House, that they had appointed a Conference at Four of the Clock this Afternoon, at the House of Mr. *Philip French*.

To which the House agreed.

Ordered, That Mr. *French*, Capt. *Coddrington*,¹ Col. *Howell*,² Capt. *Garton*, Mr. *De Lancey*, and Major *Whitehead*, be, and are hereby appointed by this House, to meet the Committee of Council, to manage the conference on the subject Matter of that Message.

* * * *

Die Jovis, 2 ho. P. M. Nov. 26, 1702.

* * * *

Mr. *French* reported from the Committee of this House, appointed to be Managers of the Conference with the Committee of Council, That they had met the Committee of Council, and concluded on the Bill entitled, [as above]; the Amendment to which being read, was agreed to by the House.

* * * *

Ordered, That Mr. *De Lancey*, do carry up to the Council, the Bill for the Encouragement of an *English* Free-School, in the City of *New York*, and the Bill for regulating of Slaves, and acquaint them, this House had agreed to the Amendments to each Bill.

* * * *

At a Council [etc. on the same day].

Coll^o W^m Smith Chairman of the Committee of the Council appointed to meet a Committee of the house of Representatives on the amendment to the Bill for Incouragm^t of a Grammar Free Schooll &c does report to his Excellency in Council that the sd Committee have mett and have agreed to the amendment to the said Bill as followeth vizt: That Instead of the last provisoe made by the Council as an amendm^t to the sd Bill these following words be Inserted [Provided allwayes that such Schoollmaster shall from time to time as a vacancy happens be Chosen and Recomend^d by the Comon Council of the said City for the time being in order to be Licensed and approved by the Right honoble the Bishopp of London for the time being or the Governor or Comander in Chief of this province for the time being any thing herein Contained to the Contrary thereof in any ways notwithstanding.]

Which was approved of and

Ordered, that the same be sent down to the house of Representatives for their Concurrence to the sd Amendm^t & that Rip van Dam Esq do carry the same.

* * * *

¹Thomas Coddrington, of New York,

²Matthew Howell, of Suffolk.

At a Council, [etc.], this 27th 9^{ber} 1702.

Ordered, the Clerk of the Council do acquaint the House of Representatives, to attend his Excellency in Council at Fort William Henry, immediately.

Accordingly the Speaker, with the House, attended his Excellency in Council, where his Excellency was pleased to give his Assent to the several Bills following, viz :

An Act for encouragement of a Grammar Free School in the City of New York.

Referring to the general legislation of the session and to the special act under consideration, Lord Cornbury wrote to the Lords of Trade, in December of the same year :

The general Assembly of this Colony met . . . on the 20 of October last at Jamaica, and sat there till the 14 of November on which day I did at the request of the House, adjourn them to New York to meet there on the 16 of November (the sickness God be praised quite over) there they continued their Sessions till the 27 of November during which time they passed several Bills in number fifteen of which I send your Lordships Transcripts under the Seale of this Colony for your approbation and hope the Queen will be pleased to approve of them.

The 11th for a free school I hope wants no recommendation.¹

The following is a transcript of the Common Council Records of the City of New York, for 1702, so far as they relate to the school proposed to be established under the foregoing legislative act of that year :

Citty of New Yorke } ss. Att a Common Council held att the Citty Hall of the said Citty on Monday the 23^d day of December Anno Dom 1702.

PRESENT—Philip French Esq^r Mayor
 Samson Shelton Broughton Esq^r Recorder
 Jacobus V : Cortlandt } Esq^{rs} Aldermen
 John Corbett }
 William Smith }
 Jeremiah Tothil }
 Caleb Cooper } Assistants
 Bartholomew Laroux }
 Jan Hendrickse Brevort }

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., iv, 1004.

WHEREAS there is an act of Generall Assembly of this Province entituled an act for encouragement of a Grammar Free School in the Citty of New Yorke. And Whereas this Court are of Opinion that att this time, there is not any person within this Citty (with whose Conveniency it would be agreeable) proper and duely qualified to take upon him the office of School Master of the said Citty but think it nessessary that the want thereof be Recommended to the Right Hon^{ble} the Bishop of London to send over hither a person of good learning of pious life and vertuous Conversation of English Extract and of good and mild temper to be the said school master and in Order thereunto itt is hereby Resolved *nemine contra dicente* that this court doe Petition his Excellency the Lord Cornbury to Recommend this affair in the name of this Corporation to his Lordship the Bishop of London and that his Excellency will also be pleased to Recommend the further Encouragement of the said free school to the society for propagating the Gospel in foreign parts and likewise to her Most Sacred Majesty that her Majesty will be most graciously pleased to appropriate a parte of the farme commonly called the Kings farme lying within this Citty for the further encouragement of the said free school that M^r Recorder doe draw the said Petition and that M^r Mayor doe sign the same accordingly by Order of this Court.¹

* * * * *

Citty of } ss. Att a Common Council held att the Citty Hall of
New Yorke } the said City on Fryday the 15th day of Janu-
ary Anno Dom 1702

PRESENT—[the same as Dec. 23, 1702, except Caleb Cooper and Jan Hendrickse Brevort, and in addition Lawrence Reade, Alderman, and Robert Lurting, Assistant.]

The following address to his Excellency was read and approved and Ordered the same be signed by this Court and presented to his Excellency and that the same be Recorded

To HIS EXCELLENCY Edward Viscount Cornbury Cap^t Gen^l and Governour in Chiefe of the Province of New Yorke and all the Territories and Tracts of Land depending thereon in America and vice admiral of the same &c:

The Humble Address of the Mayor Alderman and Commonalty of the Citty of New Yorke in Common Council assembled,

MOST HUMBLY SHEWETH :

That the last session of the General Assembly of this Province your Excellency having been pleased to give your assent to the passing an act whereby this Corporation is Impowered to nominate and present to your Excellency for your approbation a fitt and able person to teach a publick free school within this Citty and to raise Moneys

¹ Minutes of the N. Y. Common Council (MSS.), ii, 517.

towards the Maintainance of such person, wee are become very solicitous which ways to apply our selves for the finding out one truly qualified for that trust and duty much doubting that neither these nor the neighboring countrys can supply us therewith to whose convenience the same may be agreeable.

Wherefore that so good a worke may not suffer by delay nor fail of its desired end Wee the said Mayor Alderman & Commonalty become most humble Supplicants to your Excellency that you would be pleased to help on the structure whose foundation you have already laid in Representing our Want of a School Master with all the difficult Circumstances thereof to the Right Reverend and no less Honourable my Lord of London and in Requesting his fatherly Care & Concern for us therein and by his Lordships means that of the Society for propagating the Gospell in foreign parts in Order to our being supplyd from thence with a person of good learning pious life and vertuous Conversation of English Extract and mild temper to be our said School Master and that your Excellency would be further pleased to Recommend our affair and design of a free school aforesaid unto her Majesties grace and favour and in our behalfe, most humbly beseech her Majesty that some parte of the farme commonly called the Kings farme within the Liberties of this Cittie may be appropriated for the farther and better Support and Maintainance of the said School and School Master.

And wee your Excellencys most humble Supplicants aforesaid shall ever pray, &c:¹

* * * *

We find no record of the actual establishment of the school in question, until the year 1704. The Abstract of Proceedings of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, for the year 1704, contains the following statement, with evident reference to this school :

A Latin Free school is likewise established at New York, by the influence of His Ex. the Lord Cornbury, with 2 others [i. e., schools], by which means sound Religion visibly gains ground there. There are also Proposals going on for Building a College on the Queens new Farm by subscription.²

The foregoing statement in regard to the "Latin Free School, . . . with 2 others," seems to have been derived from certain paragraphs in "A summary Account," etc., prepared by Rector William Vesey, in October, 1704, to wit :

* * * *

His Lordship hath also been highly instrumental in enacting a law for establishing a Latin free school, and to endow it with a salary of Fifty pound per annum, to which station his Lordship hath pre-

¹ Minutes of the N. Y. Common Council (MSS.), ii, 519, 520.

² Soc. for Prop. of Gospel, etc.; Abs. of Proceedings, 1704-5, p. 26.

ferred the ingenious Mr. George Muirson, who for some time discharged that function with approbation & success.

Two other schools are likewise established in this City by his Excellency's care.¹

* * * * *

Mr. Muirson was duly licensed to teach, in the following terms:

EDWARD VISCOUNT CORNBURY Cap^t Gen^l and Govern^r in Chief of the Province of New York New Jersey & of all the Territories and tracts of Land depending thereon in America and vice admirall of the same &c,

To M^r George Muirson Greeting

I do hereby authorize and empower you to keep and teach school wth in the City of New York, and to instruct all Children wth whom you shall be intrusted in the English Latin and Greek tongues or Languages and also in the arts of writing and arithmetick. You are therefore carefully and diligently to discharge the Duty of a school-master in ye said City and you are to receive and enjoy all such priviledges and advantages as to the office and place of a Schoolmaster doth or may belong whereof the Mayor all her maties Justices of y^e Peace and other officers wth in the said City are hereby required to take notice and Govern themselves accordingly Given under my hand and Seal att arms att ffort ann in New York this Twenty fifth day of April 1704

CORNBURY.

by his Excell^{cy} command

Geo Clarke D Secy³

The Governor also issued a warrant for the payment of Mr. Muirson's salary:

[Seale] By his Excellency Edward Viscount Cornbury[etc]

You are hereby Directed and required to pay or cause to be paid unto Mr. George Muirson School Master of the City of New Yorke the Sum of five and Twenty pounds for half a years Salary Due and Ending the second Tuesday in January next for which this shall be your Sufficient Warrant. Given under my hand and Seale att ffort anne in New York this 20th of October 1704

CORNBURY

To William Peartree Esq^r

Mayor of the City of New Yorke³

Early in 1705, Mr. Muirson went to England to receive ordination,⁴ and Mr. Andrew Clarke was appointed by the Common Council as city schoolmaster. The record of his appointment is as follows:

¹ Doc. Hist. of N. Y., iii, 118 (8^o ed.) ; 75 (4^o ed.)

³ Deeds (MS.), in office of Secretary of State, x, 5.

⁴ N. Y. Col. MSS., 1, 19.

⁵ Bolton's Hist. of the Church in West. Co., 149.

City of } ss. Att a Common Council held att the City Hall of
New York } the said City on Tuesday the 22^d day of January
Anno Dom^o 1705.

* * * *

The petition of Mr Andrew Clarke was read praying to be by this Court appointed School Master of this City according to an act of General Assembly of this Province entituled an act for Encouragement of A Grammar free school in the City of New York, which Petition being taken into the consideration of this Court and they being well satisfied of the Sobriety Learning and Integrity of the said Andrew Clarke doo (*nemine contra dicente*) hereby nominate and appoint the said M^r Andrew Clarke school master of this City of New York Pursuant to the said act.¹

* * * *

We fail to find, among the meager files of the corporation for that early period, the petition of Mr. Clarke, referred to in the above council minute, and there seems to be no further official evidence that he actually served under such appointment, except his license to teach, dated August 14, 1705,² which is the same in form as that granted to Mr. Muirson, as quoted above.

A brief narrative appears in certain historical works,—evidently based in the first instance upon the corporation records already quoted, and thence adopted as standard by subsequent authors,—which concludes with the remark that “it was not until 1705 that the school was finally established, and Andrew Clarke appointed master.”³

We regret that this narrative, which entirely overlooks Mr. Muirson's previous employment, does not go on to state where and how “the school was established,” how long and with what success it continued, etc. Possibly these details were regarded as too trivial for insertion in the general history of the State, or of the city; although we rather conclude that the sources of information failed at this point. The bare appointment of the schoolmaster seems to be the only authenticated fact embraced in the narrative above quoted, and the establishment of the school appears rather to be assumed from the fact of such appointment, than substantiated by any official record. We have been unable, on careful search at the New York city hall, to find any warrant or order for the payment of Mr. Clarke's salary, or any allusion, official or otherwise, to the existence of this school at any later period. Under the provision of the statutes bearing upon the subject, it was incumbent on the vestrymen of the parish to assess,

¹ Minutes of the Common Council, iii, 69.

² Deeds, x, 65.

³ Mary L. Booth's History of the City of New York, p. 274; S. S. Randall's History of the State of New York, p. 51.

collect and expend the money required for the support of the schoolmaster; and but for the destruction of the early records of Trinity church,¹ we might now be able to determine how long, if at all, Mr. Clarke was continued in service. As it is, we are left in doubt whether the act of 1702 was directly productive of any further educational fruit.

It is somewhat remarkable that Mr. Clarke's name does not appear in a list of city schoolmasters, from 1695 to the Revolution, appended to Valentine's History of the City of New York; although this can hardly be regarded as valid evidence on the subject of his actual employment, since the names of other well authenticated schoolmasters are omitted, and no mention of the schools of the city occurs in the body of the work.²

The following extract from the Minutes of the Common Council, indicates that Mr. Clarke subsequently engaged in the civil service of the colony :

25th October, 1712.

Mr Andrew Clarke who was lately Elected Constable of the South Ward personally Appeared before this Court and Acquainted them that he Could not serve in that Office by reason he was Employed by the Receiver General of this Colony in Collecting her Majesties quitt Rents, it is therefore Order'd that the said Andrew Clarke do pay the fine for his said Refusal and that the Mayor Issue his Warrant to the Alderman of the said Ward to Elect another fitt person on Tuesday Next to serve in the said Office for the year Ensueing.

Mr. Henry Onderdonk, Jr., says :

Andrew Clark lived in Jamaica and was Clerk of Common Pleas of Queens Co., from 1723 to 1756.

A Dutch scholmaster seems to have been employed at Kinderhook as early as 1702, as appears from the following

Certificate in favor of Mr. Van Vleck.

Kinderhook the 30th Novemb. Anno Domine 1702.

In the first year of the Reign of her Majesty ANNE, Queen of England, Scotland, Ireland and France, Defender of the Faith, We the undersigned inhabitants of Kinderhook patent acknowledge and Declare that Paulus van Vleg during the whole of the time that he hath resided here and since he was accepted as Precentor and school-

¹ See the "Act for settling a Ministry," etc., passed Sept. 22, 1693, as referred to in the foregoing act of 1702.

² We propose to insert Mr. Valentine's list in a subsequent part of our "Annals," with such additions as we may be able to make.

master of our Church hath truly comported himself to the Great content of our congregation.

* * * * *

YOHANNES VAN ALEN
COENRAST BORGHGHARDT
ABRAM VAN ALSTYN
ZAMMEET VAN YANSAN¹

A certain Albany schoolmaster has, perhaps, no other memorial of service in this capacity, than the following :

At a Common Councill held in y^e Citty Hall of Albany this first of May, 1703

* * * * *

Evert Ridder of the Citty of Albany makes his humble application to the Mayor, Aldermen and Assistance to be permitted to teach schoole in the Citty aforesaid, which request is taken into consideration, and granted accordingly.²

About this time (1703-7) several licenses to teach schools, in New York city and elsewhere, were granted by his Excellency Lord Cornbury, in addition to those of George Muirson and Andrew Clarke, already mentioned. Some of these licenses have been printed within a few years, as mementoes of the olden time, but the most of them we have found only in the manuscript volumes of Deeds, in the office of the Secretary of State, where they were originally recorded. We insert such as were issued prior to 1707, in chronological and consecutive order :

EDWARD VISCOUNT CORNBURY [etc]

I doe hereby authorize and Impower you Andrew ffoucautt to teach an English and ffrench School within the City of New York and to instruct all Children where with you shall be intrusted fo[r] y^e purpose in the said Languages, as alsoe in y^e art of Writeing Arethmetick &c. You are therefore carefully and Diligently to discharge the duty of a Schoolmaster in y^e said City, and to receive and enjoy all such priviledges and advantages as to the office and Place of a Schoolmaster doth and may belong and appertain. Whereof y^e Mayor all her Maj^{ties} Justices of the Peace and other Officers within the said City are hereby required to take notice and Govern themselves accordingly and for soe doing this shall be your sufficient Warrant. Given under my hand and seale att Arms att her Maj^{ties} fort in New York, this thirteenth Day of September Anno Dom 1703

CORNBURY³

¹ Doc. Hist. of N. Y., iii, 894 (8^o ed.) ; 589 (4^o ed.)

² Munsell's Annals, iv, 177.

³ Deeds, ix, 786.

Edward Viscount Cornbury [etc].

To the Worthy M^r Elias Neau,

Greeting Reposing speciall trust and Confidence in your ability prudence and Integrity have nominated Constituted and appointed and do hereby nominate Constitute and appoint you y^e Sd Elias Neau to be Catechist in the City of New Yorke and Do hereby give and grant unto you full Licence and power to Catechise all Children Indians Negroes and Other persons within y^e Sd Citty. Given under my hand and Seale att ffort Anne in New Yorke this twenty fourth day of August 1704

CORNBURY¹

* * * *

According to the brief narrative furnished by Jonathan Hasbrouck, Esq., of Kerhonkson, respecting early schools in Kingston, Ulster county, and quoted in connection with our "Annals of Education in New Netherland," Mr. William Montagne (or La Montagne), who seems to have been, at various times, secretary of the Esopus, and sheriff of Ulster county, was also for a time schoolmaster at Kingston, under the English. We have found, however, no earlier official record of educational affairs at Kingston than the following license to one Stephen Gasheris, a letter from whom, dated July 4, 1715, relative to a legal proceeding, is also on file in the office of the Secretary of State:²

Edward Visc^t. Cornbury, G^v Vice-Admiral &c,

To Stephen Gasheris Greeting

You are hereby Impowered & Lycensed to read y^e service of y^e Dutch Church at Kingstown in y^e County of Ulster from time to time untill you receive further orders from me, and you are likewise hereby Impowered & Lycensed to Keep a writing & reading school at Kingstown afores^d untill you receive further orders from me to y^e contrary. Given under my hand at Kingstown this tenth day of August in y^e third year, &c, annoque, Dom. 1704³

Edward Viscount Cornbury [etc].

To M^r Henry Lindley Greeting,

I do hereby authorize and impower you to Keep and Teach Schoole wth in the Town of Jamaica in Queens County and to Instruct all Children wth whom you shall be intrusted in the English and Lattin Tongues or Languages and also in the art of Writing and Arithmetic for and During my Pleasure Given under my hand and Seale att Fort Anne in New Yorke this 18th day of Aprill 1705

CORNBURY

By his Excel^s Command

Geo: Clarke Sec^y⁴

¹ Deeds, x, 27.

² N. Y. Col. MSS., lx, 15.

³ N. Y. Col. MSS., xlix, 165.

⁴ Deeds, x, 48.

A license in the same form was issued to Mr. Alexander Baird, on the 6th day of March, 1706, for the town of Hempstead, in Queens county.¹

Edw^d Viscc^t Cornbury [etc.]

To Elias Bon Repos Greeting,

You are hereby Impowered & Lycens'd to Keep School within y^e Town of New Rochel in y^e County of West Chester & carefully & diligently to Instruct y^e Children under yo^r Care & Tuition in y^e art of Reading & Writing during my pleasure. Given under my hand & Seal at New York this 23^d day of June 1705 & in y^e 4th year of her Ma^{ty's} Reign.

CORNBURY.

By his Excell. Command,
Will Anderson D. Sec^{ry}.²

This license was renewed by Governor Hunter in the same words, Dec. 12, 1712.⁴

Alex^r Baird, Teacher, 1707, had a pew in the Dutch Church at Jamaica, also called "Alexander the Scotchman." I suppose he was also a scrivener, as he was a witness to a will which he probably wrote at Foster's Meadow, Hempstead, 1714.²

Mr. John Wood was duly licensed by Lord Cornbury, Aug. 29, 1705, to keep a Dancing School within the City of New York during the Governor's pleasure.

On the same day, Mr Prudent De La Fayole was authorized to keep a French School within the said city.⁵

Thomas Huddleston[e] was licensed on the 5th day of December, 1705, to teach the English language, writing and arithmetic in the town of Jamaica, Queens Co.⁶

The wordy plumage with which the diminutive body of the following license is winged on either side, in "spread eagle" style, is somewhat peculiar:

By his Ex^{ty} Edward Viscount Cornbury Captain Gen^l & Gov^r in chief of the Provinces of New York & New Jersey and Territorys Depending thereon in America and Vice admiral of the same &c.

To M^r James Jeffray Greeting.

I do hereby authorize and Impower You to Keep and Teach School within the city of New York and to Instruct all children with whom you Shall be intrusted in the art of Writing and Arithmetick for and During my Pleasure.

¹ Deeds, x, 171.

² H. Onderdonk, Jr.

³ Deeds, x, 65.

⁴ Deeds, x, 826.

⁵ Deeds, x, 66.

⁶ Deeds, x, 82.

Given under my hand and Seal at ffort Anne in New Yorke this Seventeenth day of Aprill—in the fifth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lady Anne, by the Grace of God of England, Scotland, ffrance and Ireland Queen Defender of the faith etc^a—Annoque Domini 1706

CORNBURY

By his Ex^{ty} Comand

GEO. CLARKE, Secty.¹

Edward ffitz Gerald was also licensed, on the first day of May next following, in nearly the same words, to teach school in Westchester county.²

Some years later, Allane Jarratt, afterwards well known as a surveyor, etc., made the following application for a license to teach :

To his Excellency Robert Hunter Esq^r Capt. General and Governour in Chief of the Provinces of New York New Jersey and Territories depending thereon in America and Vice Admiral of the same.

The Humble Petition of Allane Jarratt

Humbly Sheweth

That yo^r Petitioner haveing by an experience and practice of the Art of Navigation and other parts of the Mathemat^a for the space of fourteen yeares after an early education in the most usfullest parts thereof acquired a competent Knowledge therein, and being sensible how much the youth brought up in this city are at a loss in goeing to sea without a sufficient Instruction in writeing and Arithmetick and in the Art of Navigation with other usefull parts of the Mathematicks that might be abundantly servicable to them in the discharge of their duties at sea and haveing been desired by several persons to Instruct them privately having now some leisure time but for avoiding presumption and offence

Your Petitioner Humbly begs yo^r Excellency's Lycence to teach Writeing, Arithmetick, Navigation and other parts of the Mathematicks, and yo^r Petitioner as in Duty bound shall ever pray &c :

ALLANE JARRATT³

[Endorsed] 15th July 1612.

This application was granted, in due form, as follows :

By his Excellency Robert Hunter Esq^r [etc.]

To Allane Jarratt Gent^l Greeting:

Being assured of yo^r experience and Knowledge in y^e practice of y^e art of Navigation and of all parts of the Mathematics I doe hereby authorize and Impower you to Teach writeing, arithmetick Navigation and other parts of mathematics to all such persons as shall be desirous to be Instructed therein within this City or province of New York for and during my pleasure Given under my hand

¹ Deeds, x, 112 ; N. Y. Col. MSS., II, 111. ² N. Y. Col. MSS., lvii, 190.

³ Deeds, x, 114 ; N. Y. Teacher, vii, 273.

and Seale at fort Anne in New York y^e ffourth day of July in y^e Eleaventh yeare of y^e reigne of our Sovereigne Lady Anne by y^e grace of God of Great Brittainne ffrance and Ireland Queene Defender of y^e ffaith &c, Annoqe Dm 1712

RO: HUNTER

By his Excellencies command

J WILEMAN D Secy¹

Mr. Henry Onderdonk, Jr., has furnished the following memoranda relative to Friends' schools:

1703. A schoolmaster is deemed necessary for Flushing, &c. Houses to be built for Friends' use, &c.

1709. Thomas Makins,² schoolmaster at Flushing, signified his willingness to bring Friends' children to the week day meeting, &c.

George Fox composed a spelling book to initiate children in the doctrine of Friends. I have seen 2d edition, 1706. He shows the propriety of Friends' names for the months, days of week, and use of singular *thee* for plural *you* in addressing *one* person: all justified by scripture. Its title page was thus: "An Instruction for right Spelling, Reading & Writing. [By Geo. Fox & Ellis Hooks.] London, 1673." 12°. It was reprinted, with additions, 1673, '83, '91, '97, 1700.

Another edition: "Instructions for right Spelling and plain directions for reading and writing *true* English, &c., with several delightful things very useful and necessary for young and old to learn; by G. F. & E. H., enlarged by A. S.—London, printed and sold by T. Sowle, 1706:" reprinted, 8°, 1726.

It may be remembered that mention of a movement for establishing a Free School in the town of Hempstead was made in the preceding quotations from the Journal of the Assembly, relative to the passage of the free school act of 1702, though it does not appear that the action proposed was carried into effect. Five years later, a much smaller tract was voted for the use of the schoolmaster, though this action was repealed during the same year, as appears from the following record:

1707, Ap. 1.—By major vote 4 acres in the town spot are voted for the use of the town for to settle a schoolmaster upon for to teach children, the land to be for the use of a school forever.

This act was voted void, Oct. 20, 1707.³

A later entry from the same source is as follows:

1709, Dec. 12.—The school house is let to Isaac Jarmin for a year except the leanto which is reserved for the use of the school at any time when a schoolmaster presents for £4 18, to be p^d the church wardens; and if the town shall hire a schoolmaster, then he shall go forth of said house at a quarter's warning.⁴

¹ Deeds, x, 819, 810.

² He was at Philadelphia, 1729, and wrote a Latin poem there (*Descriptio Pennsylvaniæ*). H. Onderdonk, Jr.

³ Hempstead Records, D., 288, as furnished by H. Onderdonk, Jr.

It appears from a petition, dated August 1, 1711, as quoted in Stiles' History of Brooklyn (vol. i, pp. 180, 181), that there was in Flatbush "one howse & Lot of ground in the said Towne called the school howse containing Eight acres;" also, in Flatland "one howse called the School howse with the land adjoyning Containing two acres or thereabouts."

Having now reached the date (1709) of the expiration, by its own limitation, of the free-school act of 1702, it is in point to remark that no effort seems to have been made to revive this act, nor, indeed, to make like provision by law for the encouragement of schools of any kind, for a period of more than twenty years, and none whatever in behalf of primary education, during the remaining colonial history of the State. Whether this suspension of legislative patronage resulted from growing indifference on the part of public men to the importance of primary education, we do not now propose to consider; we rather refer to this subject for the sake of introducing the notice of a new system of instruction which, under ecclesiastical supervision, seems to have in a measure superseded, for many years, that hitherto provided by colonial and municipal authority. We refer to the venerable "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts," which, as is well known, sent many missionaries to this country and province, from its incorporation, in the year 1701, until nearly the period of the Revolution; and which, also, at the suggestion of Col. Caleb Heathcote, himself a member of the Council at the time of the passage of the act of 1702 above quoted, furnished a number of schoolmasters for various settlements of the province, during a period of more than fifty years. The extracts hereafter quoted from the official history and reports of the Society will more fully exhibit the facts on this subject.

The organization of this beneficent Society may have been the result, in part at least, of a suggestion made by the Rev. Dr. Bray, of London, in an ordination sermon, entitled:

"Apostolic Charity, its Nature and Excellence considered, in a Discourse upon Dan., 12.3. Preached at St. Paul's at the Ordination of some Protestant Missionaries to be sent into the Plantations.

[December the 19th, 1697.]¹

To which is prefixt, A General View of the English Colonies in America, with respect to Religion; in order to show what Provision

¹This date is inserted in writing in the copy belonging to the Library of the N. Y. Historical Society.

is wanting for the Propagation of Christianity in those Parts. * *
By Thomas Bray, D. D. London, 1700."

5. It will be further requisite to have free Schools erected at least one in every county, for the Education of their Children: and it would in a more especial manner, become the Professors of so Excellent a Religion as ours, to have a Provision made in one or two Schools at leastwise, in every Province, for the Instruction of half a dozen Indian Youth, to be sent afterwards amongst their own People, to civilize and convert them (p. 7, of the above.)

One of the first acts of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, was to send to the English colonies on this continent a missionary to make personal examination. The person selected was the Rev. George Keith, whose journal relative to this tour is contained in the "Collections of the Protestant Episcopal Society for the year 1841," from which volume we briefly quote:

After Mr. Keith came over and had made a survey of the field before him, he, in conjunction with the few clergymen then in the northern part of the country . . . made the following statement, designed for the Venerable Society: * * *

An Account of the State of the Church in North America, by Mr. George Keith and others. [Nov. 1702.]

NEW YORK.—There are some counties, five of which are inhabited by Dutch, and those of Dutch extraction, viz.: Albany, Ulster, Dutchess, Orange and King's County, in which the Church and Church of England Schools have not yet been settled, but the Presence of the present Governor of that Province, his Excellency the Lord Cornbury, has mightily influenced many of the people of the said counties to desire that Church of England Ministers and schoolmasters may be sent amongst them, particularly Albany representatives have desired his Lordship that an English Schoolmaster might be established in that county, . . . this Province, though it hath a great number of inhabitants, could never yet obtain a public legally Established School.

A provision is made by law for six ministers, . . . There is yet no provision for Schoolmasters made by law, though by the zealous recommendation of the Lord Cornbury to the general Assembly, a legal maintenance is undoubtedly expected, and till then the Church of England Schoolmaster in the county of New York as heretofore, will be supported by the voluntary contributions of those whose children are instructed by him; notwithstanding it is humbly conceived that an annual Pension for the support and further encouragement of some Ministers and Schoolmasters in poor Towns will be of great use and service to the Church.

No School house yet erected in this Province.

* * * *

In all these Counties where the Church is established by the law of this Province, the People generally are in a readiness to embrace the Doctrines and Worship of the Church, and to Encourage Free Schools.¹

* * * *

Col. Heathcote seems to have conceived a plan for the establishment of schools throughout the province, having written to the Secretary of the "Venerable Society," under date of April 10, 1704, as follows:

* * I had once formed a projection for fixing schools in this country for the benefit of all the youths therein, in order to their being trained up, not only in learning but in their tender years to ingraft them in the Church, but the storm which was lately raised upon me concerning church affairs, made me lay the thought of it aside for a while. However, if God is pleased to spare my life a little longer, I will, with His assistance, set it on foot, and hope it will be blessed with its desired effect.²

* * * *

Under date of June 1, 1704, Col. Heathcote further writes:

* * I did in my last acquaint you that I would put forward a school in Westchester County, which I hope in a few months to inform you I have done, having the promise of an extraordinary good man for a school master, one who is not only very firm to the Church, but I am sure will be indefatigable to instill those principles into the youth and children, of whom the greatest hopes are, I believe. At first setting out it will be attended with some difficulties, that I beg the favor of you to move the Society, that they would be pleased (until such time as we are able to carry it on without help) to give us £16 a year, or what they shall think convenient towards maintaining of the schoolmaster.³

* * * *

Mr. Bolton adds:

The school alluded to in the foregoing letter was soon after organized at Rye, and Mr. Joseph Cleator appointed schoolmaster by Col. Heathcote. The Society also at once acted upon the request made them, and granted the sum of £15 per annum for his maintenance.⁴

The annual "Abstracts of Proceedings" of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel furnish much information relative to the schools and schoolmasters under its care in this and other colonies; from which abstracts we shall make a few quotations, after having given a condensed official narrative of its educational work in this colony, for a series of years.

¹ Coll. of P. E. Hist. Soc., for 1851, pp. xv-xvii.

² Bolton's Hist. of the P. E. Church in Westchester Co., pp. 28, 29.

³ Idem, pp. 139, 140.

⁴ Idem, p. 140.

In the year 1730, the Secretary of the Society (David Humphreys, D. D.) prepared "An Historical Account of the Incorporated Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts," from which valuable work we quote at some length, prefacing the extracts concerning schoolmasters with one on ministers; the latter class having been in some degree the means of introducing the former:

New-York Government is next; this worthy People shewed an early Zeal for having the Church of *England* Worship established among them. In the Year 1693, an Act was passed for settling the Church of *England* Service in some Counties, and a Provision appointed for 6 Ministers, one for the City of *New-York*, the Capital of the Country, and the rest for other principal Towns. But this Act did not take Effect till about the year 1702, nor was the Provision made thereby, or sufficient Maintenance for the Ministers in the County Towns: These applied to the Society for Help; particularly the Inhabitants of *West-chester*, were very pressing for a Minister. Earnest Memorials were sent from the Inhabitants of *New-Rochel*, from those of *Jamaica*, and *Hempsted*, Towns in *Long-Island*; from *Statten-Island*, and from *Rye*; and their Desires have been comply'd with, and Missionaries sent to those Places.¹

*

*

*

*

In speaking of "*Statten-Island*," and the Rev. Mr. Mackenzie who was sent thither as a missionary, in 1704, Dr. Humphreys remarks:

* * It was represented by Mr. *Mackenzie*, that the greatest Disadvantage to Religion, arose from the Want of *English* Schools in that Island. The Children had no Education but the little they received from their Parents, and that bound them up to their Parents Language and Principles. Besides, there was such a Diversity of Tongues, as *English*, *French*, and *Dutch*, which made it necessary to settle a School there, more than in any other Place, in order to unite the Growing Generation in their Language, as well as in their religious Principles.

The Society were sensible that nothing could be more convenient than the opening of Schools in this Place. The whole Island was divided into three Precincts, they appointed a Schoolmaster for each. Mr. *Brown* taught School in the *South* Precinct, Mr. *Dupuy* in the *North*, and Mr. *Williamson* in the *West*. Mr. *Dupuy* did not keep School long: Mr. *Potts* succeeded him. Afterwards in the Year 1715, Mr. *Taylor* was appointed, and continues still [1728] teaching School; and several Accounts have been sent to the Society, that he teaches above 40 Scholars, without any consideration but the Society's Bounty; that he instructs them in the Church-Catechism, with the Explanation, teaches them to join in Publick Worship, and keeps also a Night School for the Instruction of the *Negroes*, and such as cannot be spared from their Work in the Day time.²

*

*

*

*

¹ Humphreys' Historical Account, p. 55.

² Idem, pp. 218, 219.

Dr. Humphreys quotes a letter written to the Society, in 1712, by the Justices of Richmond county, from which we copy these paragraphs :

We, Her Majesty's Justices of the Peace, High Sheriff, Clerk, and Commander in Chief, of her Majesty's Militia, in the County of *Richmond*, as well as for ourselves, as in the Name, and at the Desire of the other Inhabitants of the said County, Members of the Church of *England*, return our Thanks, for supporting our worthy Pastor, Mr. Mackenzie among us ; whose unblamable Life affords no Occasion of Disparagement to his Function, nor Discredit to his Doctrine.

* * * *

You have added to the former, a fresh and late Instance of your Bounty, in allowing a Support to a Schoolmaster, for the Instruction of our Youth ; the deplorable want of which hath been a great Affliction to us.¹

* * * *

In his description of Long Island and its affairs, Dr. Humphreys, speaking of Rev. Mr. Thomas, says :

* * He wrote that there was a great want of Schools ; the younger People and Children were growing up in a miserable Ignorance, for Want of being taught to read ; and he could not perform one Part of his Pastoral Office, Catechizing, for Want of a Schoolmaster to teach the Children to read. The Society appointed Mr. *Gildersleeve* Schoolmaster there, in the year 1713, and allowed him a Salary to teach the poorer Children Reading, Writing and the Rudiments of Arithmetic. The Vestry of this Parish wrote the Society a Letter on this Occasion, wherein they say : " Without your Bounty and Charity, our poor Children would undoubtedly want all Education ; our People are poor, and settled distantly from one another, and unable to board out their Children." The Society sent Quantities of Paper for the Use of the School, Catechisms, and large numbers of Common-Prayer-Books, which proved of great Benefit to the Younger People. The Youth was instructed, made their Responses regularly at Church, and Divine Service was performed with more Knowledge and Decency.²

* * * *

The following summary statement is given by the same authority :

The Society have from their first Establishment, paid Salaries to several Schoolmasters in this Government. Mr. *Gildersleeve* at *Hempsted* in *Long Island*, and Mr. *Taylor* in *Statten-Island*, have been mentioned already. Mr. *Huddleston* was appointed Schoolmaster in *New-York City*, in the Year 1709 ; he taught 40 poor Children for the Society's Allowance only ; he publicly catechised in the Steeple of *Trinity Church* on Sunday in the Afternoon, not

¹ Humphreys' Hist. Acc't, pp. 220, 221.

² Idem, pp. 224, 225.

only his own Scholars, but also the Children, Servants and Slaves of the Inhabitants, and above 100 Persons usually attended him ; Certificates attested by the Mayor of *New-York*, were Annually sent to the Society, certifying his doing such Service. He died in the Year 1726; and his Son being desirous and capable of the Office, is appointed now in his Room. Mr. *Glover* was appointed Schoolmaster at *Westchester* in the Year 1714, and afterwards Mr. *Forster* ; he teaches between 30 and 40 Children, Catechises on Saturday and Sunday, which is certified by the Minister and chief Inhabitants of that Town. Mr. *Cleator* was settled Schoolmaster at *Rye*, in the Year 1704 ; he teaches about 50 Children to Read and Write, and instructs them in the Catechism. And Mr. *Denton* hath been lately appointed Schoolmaster at *Oysterbay* in *Long-Island*.

The Society have paid Salaries to Six Schoolmasters, besides a Catechist, for the Slaves at *New-York* in this Government ; and have sent Bibles, Common-Prayers, and other Books of Devotion or Instruction, to the Number of 2220 Volumes, besides Catechisms, and small Tracts which have been dispersed among the People by the Missionaries, or among the Children by the Schoolmasters.¹

* * * *

In a chapter of the same work, on the "Endeavors to Instruct the Negroe Slaves," Dr. Humphreys says of the Society :

* * They opened a Catechising School for the Slaves at *New-York*, in the Year 1704, in which City there were computed to be about 1500 *Negro* and *Indian* Slaves, and many of their Masters well disposed to have them made Christians. The Society hoped this Example set, might kindle a Zeal in some other good People, to carry on this Work, which they were unable to effect ; and to erect Schools for the Instruction of the *Negroes*, and employ Catechists to teach them at appointed Times ; and that the Legislature in the Colonies, would, by a Law, oblige all Slaves to attend for their Instruction. The Society found soon, it was not easie to procure a Person proper to be a Catechist. Mr. *Elias Neau*, a Layman, then living in *New-York* City, as a Trader, was represented to be the properest Person for that Office. He was by Nation a *Frenchman*, had made a Confession of the *Protestant* Religion in *France*, for which he had been confined several years in Prison, and seven Years in the Gallies. When he got released, he went to *New-York*, and traded there, and had the Character, from Persons of all Persuasions, of a Man of Piety, of sober Deportment, and serious Life.

He accepted of the Offer of being Catechist ; and his former Sufferings on the Account of his Religion, did, with great Advantage recommend him to be a Teacher of the Christian Faith ; and his Humility enabled him to bear with the many Inconveniences in teaching those poor People. He entered upon his Office, in the year 1704, with great Diligence. At first he was obliged to go from House to House, to instruct the *Negroes*, this was out of Measure

¹ Humphreys' Hist. Acc't, pp. 228, 229.

laborious; afterwards he got Leave, that they should come to his House; this was a considerable Relief. There were two Obstructions still; the Time was much too short, and the Place was inconvenient, . . . being the uppermost Floor in *Mr. Neau's* House. * * *

This was a Work of great Pains and Humility; *Mr. Neau* performed it diligently; discoursing familiarly with those poor People, and laboring earnestly to accommodate his Discourse to their Capacities.

* * The Society had Accounts from Time to Time of *Mr. Neau's* Diligence and good Success; particularly one very ample Testimonial signed by the Governor of the Country (*Robert Hunter Esq;*) the Council, the Mayor, and Recorder of *New-York*, and the two Chief Justices; . . . *Mr. Neau* persevered with the same Diligence, till the Year 1722, in which he died, much regretted by all who knew his Labours. *Mr. Huddleston*, then School master in *New-York*, did for some Time supply his Place, and used to teach the *Negroes*, in the Church Steeple, every Sunday before Sermon, and at his own House after Sermon. In a little Time the Society sent the Reverend *Mr. Wetmore* to be Catechist there, and received Accounts of his discharging his Duty diligently. . . . He afterwards desired to be appointed Missionary at *Kye* in that Government and the Society complied with his Request, . . . The Society . . sent the Reverend *Mr. Colgan* in 1726, to be Catechist there.¹

* * * *

The Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, as early as 1710, made efforts to evangelize the Five Nations, and also to furnish them the means of elementary education. The progress and results of their attempts in this direction are given in the following extracts from *Dr. Humphreys' narrative* :

* * * *

A Committee met, and it was agreed there, and afterward by the Society at a general Meeting, that two Missionaries should be sent to the *Mohock* and *Oncydes Indians*; with a Salary of 150*l* Sterling each, together with an Interpreter and Schoolmaster, to teach the young *Indians*. * *

Mr. Andrews was appointed Missionary among the *Mohocks*, and *Mr. Clausen*, who had been several Years employed as Interpreter by the Government of *New-York*, in Transactions with the *Indians*, was received as Interpreter to *Mr. Andrews*, and *Mr. Oliver* was made Schoolmaster. *Mr. Andrews* was particularly directed by the Society to use all possible Means to persuade the *Indians* to let their Children learn *English*, and the Schoolmaster was to make it his whole Business to teach them. The Society were now in good Hopes this Attempt would prove successful, since Her Majesty [Queen Anne] was so graciously pleased to provide for the Security of the

¹ *Humphreys' Hist. Acc't*, pp. 236-239, 243-245.

Missionary by building a Fort just by the *Mohocks* Castle, to which the men and Children might easily resort to be instructed.

* * * *

The Schoolmaster Mr. *Oliver* opened his School. The *Indians* at first sent many of their Children, he began to teach them *English*, the parents obstinately refused to have them taught *English*. All possible Endeavors were used to persuade them; they still persisted. Mr. *Andrews* sent this Account to the Society, and rather than quite break with the *Indians*, the Schoolmaster and Interpreter began to teach the Children a little in *Indian*. The Society were forced to comply with the *Indians* Obstinacy. They procured an Impression of Hornbooks and Primmers in Indian for the Children, sent them great Numbers, as also leathern Inkhorns, Penknives, a Quantity of Paper of several Sorts, and several other little Necessaries. The Children were now taught in *Indian*, and were treated with great Kindness, no Correction dared to be used, for the Parents were so fond of their Children, and valued Learning so little, they thought it not worth gaining, at the least displeasing of their Children. To engage them farther to learn, Mr. *Andrews* used to give the Children who came to School, Victuals, and some small Utensils for their Parents. The Children used often to come for the Sake of getting Victuals; for the *Indians* are frequently drove to great Extremities, on Account of their making little or no Provision beforehand. The Children had a good natural Capacity, and an Aptness for Learning. Many of them begun to read, and some to write. This Method of giving them Victuals engaged the Parents to send them, for some time, to School.

In the mean Time, Mr. *Andrews* proceeded to instruct the grown *Indians* by Help of the Interpreter, in some of the chief Articles of Faith and Rules of Life. . . . The Society, since they could by no Means prevail on the *Indians* to learn *English*, neither young nor old, laboured to get some good Translations made, of Parts of the Scripture at least, into the *Indian* Language. . . . The Society were very much assisted in this by Mr. *Freeman*,¹ a very worthy Calvinist Minister. He had been five Years Minister at *Schenectady* to a *Dutch* Congregation, and had been employed by the Earl of *Bellamont* in the year 1700, to convert the *Indians*. He had a good Knowledge of the Dialect of the *Mohocks*, which is understood by all the *Iroquois*, who reach near 400 Miles beyond *Albany*. The Society applied to him for any proper Papers wrote in that Language, which he might have. . . . He very frankly gave the Society a Copy of these Translations, which were sent to Mr. *Andrews* for his Help, and they were a great Help to him. He used frequently to read some of these to the *Indians*, and they could comprehend well enough by his reading. But the Society were desirous some Part of the Scripture might be printed in *Indian*, and the Copies given to the *Indians*, and they taught at least to read that.

¹ Bernardus Freeman, minister of the Reformed *Dutch* Church, *Schenectady*, and after 1704, of *Flatbush*, L. I. (H. Onderdonk, Jr.)

Accordingly the Morning and Evening Prayer, the Litany, the Church Catechism, Family-Prayers, and several Chapters of the Old and New Testament, were printed at *New-York*; the Copies were sent to Mr. *Andrews*, and he gave them to such of the Indians as knew anything of Letters. * * *

In a short time, the *Indians* grew weary of Instruction, the Men grown, would go out in Bodies a hunting for several Months, and forget all they had been taught; and the young Boys when they grew up, were taken out by their Fathers to hunt, and so lost all they had got. This roving Life utterly destroyed all the Missionary and Schoolmaster's Labours. * * *

Mr. *Andrews* wrote several Accounts more in 1718, that all his Labours proved ineffectual, the *Indians* would not send their Children to School, and no Body came to the Chapel; that the four other Nations of the *Iroquois*, as they came by the *Mohocks* Castle, insulted and threatened him, that the Interpreter and Schoolmaster perceived all their Labour was lost, and that they were frequently in Danger of their Lives if they went out of the Fort. The Society received these Accounts with much Dissatisfaction, as being extremely contrary to what their good Desires had made them hope. However, they were so unwilling to abandon this wretched People to themselves, that they would not dismiss Mr. *Andrews* from his Mission upon his own Representation of his ill Success. They wrote to the Governor of *New York*, *Robert Hunter* Esq; acquainted him with the Accounts they had received, and requested the Favour of his Excellency, to cause an Inquiry to be made, whether Mr. *Andrews* Labours were so fruitless among the *Indians*, and submitted it to his Judgment to dismiss Mr. *Andrews*, if they should be found so. The Accounts transmitted hither were found true upon Examination, and Mr. *Andrews* left that miserable Race of Men.¹

The following specimen quotations from the Society's annual "Abstracts of Proceedings," are also of interest in this connection:

* *. The Inhabitants and Freeholders in the Town of *Rye* and *Mamaroneck*, in the Province of *New York*, become humble Supplicants to the Lord Bishop of *London*, that Mr. *Joseph Cleator*, whose Affairs required his attendance in *England*, might obtain such an Allowance from the Society, as with what they were able to give him might encourage his Return among them, to teach School for the Instruction of their Children.² * *

* *. They have allowed a Salary to Mr. *Cleator* a School-Master at *Rye* in the Province of *New York*.³

* * * *

IV. Besides the Missionaries (with whom the Society has liberally provided several of Her Majesty's Colonies, even beyond the narrow

¹ Humphreys' Hist. Acc't, pp. 294, 295, 299-305, 310, 311.

² Account of the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts, * * 1706, p. 65.

³ Idem, pp. 36, 37.

Bounds of their Income) there has been a great Demand upon them for Catechists and School-Masters to Instruct not only the Servants and Slaves (who have hitherto lived as without God in the World) but also the Children of the Planters, especially the poorer sort, in Reading, Writing and the Principles of the Christian Religion, as Taught and Professed in the Church of *England*; but the Narrowness of their fund having obliged the Society to send but few of these, a worthy member of their body, Colonel *Heathcote* of *New York*, has suggested an expedient of maintaining a great many more School-Masters, at the easy rate of Five or Six Pounds *per annum*, which the Society has most readily embraced, and referred it to the Governor himself, and the Missionaries of that Province, to put the proposal into Practice.¹

* * * *

Of the two persons recommended for *Staten Island*, in the following extract, Dr. Humphreys' "Historical Account" mentions Mr. Brown only; and we have seen no other notice of Mr. Drewit:

* * Mr. *Mackenzey*, the Society's Missionary in *Staten Island* in the Province of *New York*, having informed them how much they wanted School-Masters, to instruct the children of the *English*, *Dutch* and *French*, in the said Island, and having recommended Mr. *Adam Brown*, and Mr. *Benjamin Drewit*, for that Purpose, the Society made choice of them both; and in the City of *New York*, they have given a little Pension to Mr. *William Huddleston*, the chief School-Master there, upon condition that he shall Teach 40 poor children *gratis*, after the same manner as they are instructed in our Charity Schools here in *England*.²

* * * *

One of the greatest Cares incumbent on the Society for this last Year, has been to encourage the Instruction and better Education of Children and Youth, as well *Indian* as *English*, to breed them to Civility and good Conscience, in the Knowledge of Letters, and the Principles and Practice of Christian Religion; to which purpose they retain'd and rewarded such Teachers and Masters as they found there capable and willing to be Employed; and sent over others, with Books, and Salaries sufficient for them.³

* * * *

V. As to *Catechists* or *School-masters*, the Society have, as their Ability would permit, answered many Demands upon them on that Head also, . . . By continuing Mr. *William Huddleston's* Salary of 10*l per Ann.* for his care of the *School* at *New York*, (the Maintenance of which was before *uncertain* and *precarious*); By granting 10*l per annum* each to Mr. *Francis Williamson*, and Mr. *John de Puy*, for their Pains in the *School-way* at *Staten Island*, so satisfactory to the worthy *Missionary* there, the Reverend Mr. *Aeneas Mackenzey*, and so beneficial to the People as appears by an Address

¹ Abs. of Proc. of Soc. for Prop. of Gospel, 1710-11, p. 28.

² Idem, p. 32.

³ Idem, p. 48.

of the Justices of *Richmond County*, dated *June 13, 1712*, and by coming to a unanimous resolution, that Three more should be forthwith allow'd the Society's Pay, as Chatechists or School-masters; one for the town of *Hampstead in Long Island*, at *10l per Annum*, upon the Request of *Mr. John Thomas*, Missionary there, who represents the Children thereof, for want of Letters and Education, as *wild, uncultivated and unimproved*, as the soil was when their Forefathers first had it. A Second, at the Request of the Reverend *Mr. Bridge*, Minister of *Rye*, for the Service of two places in that Parish, distant from his Church, where several children want Instruction, who shall be allow'd *5l per Annum* each, on a certificate that they have taught 30 such, the *Bible*, the *Catechism*, and the Use of the *Liturgy*: . . . To render this Branch of the Society's Care, which relates to the Education of *Catechumens*, and the Supply of *Missionaries* more effectual, it has been promised, in former Accounts, that the worthy Colonel *Heathcoat's* Proposal, of easie Ways for maintaining *Charity-Schools in America*, by an Allowance of 5 or 6l a year to each; . . . should be respectively improv'd, when the Society should be in circumstances;¹

*

*

*

*

The Society have received also a letter from *Mr. Thomas Huddleston*, Schoolmaster at *New York*, acquainting with the condition of his School, and inclosing a certificate from the Mayor of *New York* of the number of his Scholars, and of his Diligence in his School, whereby it appear'd that he teaches 40 poor Children for the Society's Allowance only, which being then but fifteen Pound *per Annum*, the Society have for his encouragement increased his Salary to twenty Pound *per Annum*: and upon his representing to the Society the great Want of Books for the poor Children, they have sent him twelve Bibles with the Common Prayer, twelve Testaments, twelve Psalters, twelve Expositions of the Catechism, and twelve Primers.²

*

*

*

*

From *Mr. Hudleston*, Schoolmaster at *New York*, That he teaches fifty poor children on the Society's Bounty to read and write, and instructs them in the Church Catechism, many of which are now fit for any Trade; and as they go off, his number is always kept up, poor People daily coming to see if there is any vacancy to admit their Children, being not able themselves to pay for their Learning.³

The following extracts belong to a period subsequent to that embraced in *Dr. Humphreys' Historical Account*:

*

*

*

*

* * The Society also have received an Account from *Mr. Beasley*,⁴ Schoolmaster at *Albany*, in the Province of *New York*, That he

¹ Abs. of Proc., etc., 1712-18, pp. 40, 41.

² Abs. of Proc., etc., 1728-9, p. 45.

³ Abs. of Proc., etc., 1725-6, p. 41.

⁴ Seems to have been afterwards a Missionary and Schoolmaster at "*St. John's Town in New Foundland*," the name being given as "*Peasley*." (Abs. of Proc. etc., 1747-8, p. 35.)

hath lately instructed 8 Negroes, viz.: 6 Adults and 2 Children, who have been baptized by the Reverend Mr. *Miln*, the Society's Missionary at *Albany*.¹

* * * *

The Reverend Mr. *Colgan*, Minister at *Jamaica*, on *Long Island*, writes *Octob.* 11, 1737, . . . Mr. *Colgan* hath sent likewise a Certificate of the good conduct of Mr. *Willett*, the Society's Schoolmaster there; that he is of an exemplary life and Conversation, and teaches School with Diligence: The Number of his Scholars being forty-three, of whom twenty-three are taught *gratis* by the Society's Bounty.²

* * Mr. *Noxon*, the Schoolmaster, writes from *New York*, *August* 6, 1738, That he hath upwards of fifty poor Children, whom he teaches to read, write and cypher upon the Society's Charity; and brings to *Trinity Church*, on *Wednesdays*, *Fridays* and *Holy Days*, to be catechised. He adds, there is great want of Common Prayer-Books and Psalters: And the Reverend Mr. Commissary *Vesey*, by a letter of *Aug.* 10, 1738, attests, that Mr. *Noxon* is diligent in his office, and of a good Life and Conversation:³ * * *

The efforts in behalf of the Indians, which were abandoned in 1718, were subsequently renewed with more favorable results:

* * * *

However, the Society mindful of the Apostolical Advice, *not to be weary in well-doing*, resolved to make another attempt; . . . and on *August* 30th, 1736, Mr. *Barclay* wrote from the same place [*Fort Hunter*], that the *Indians* continued to attend devoutly every Lord's-day, and understood him perfectly well, he having made himself Master of the Pronunciation of their Language, which was very difficult, the Words being many of them as long as Sentences with a great rumbling Sound: and that he taught 40 young *Mohocks* to read, and write, most of whom made good progress; and he kept a Catechetical School in the Evenings, at which both old and young attended.⁴ * * *

* * Mr. *Barclay* intreats the Society, if it can by any means be afforded, to appoint an *Indian* Schoolmaster to teach their youth to read their own Language, there being several *Indians* well qualified for that office; the Society hath directed Mr. *Barclay* to appoint one of them to it, with the approbation of Lieutenant-Governor *Clarke*, and of the Commissioners for *Indian Affairs* there.⁵ * *

* * He [Mr. *Barclay*] hath appointed, with the Consent and Approbation of the Lieutenant-Governor *Clarke*, and the Commissioners for *Indian Affairs*, *Mohock* Schoolmasters at their two Towns, viz.: *Cornelius* a Sachem at the lower, and one *Daniel* at the upper Town, who are both very diligent and teach the young *Mohocks* with surprising success.⁶ * * *

¹ Abs. of Proc., etc., 1732-3, p. 48.

² Abs. of Proc., etc., 1738-9, pp. 54, 55.

³ Abs. of Proc., etc., 1738-9, pp. 55, 56.

⁴ Abs. of Proc., etc., 1739-40, pp. 69, 71.

⁵ Abs. of Proc., etc., 1740-41, pp. 62, 63.

⁶ Abs. of Proc., etc., 1742-3, pp. 46, 47.

It will appear from the list of Schoolmasters hereafter given, that teachers for the Indians were maintained by the Society, for about a quarter of a century from this period.

We add a few more items relative to the English Schools, prior to 1746 :

* * Mr. *Taylor*, the Society's Schoolmaster at *Staten Island* being dead, the Society upon a Petition and Recommendation from the Reverend Mr. *Arnold* their Missionary, and from the Church wardens and vestry of the Church of *Staten Island*, of Mr. *Andrew Wright*, as a Person of Good Morals, and a constant Communicant, and well qualified to teach, hath appointed him School master there to instruct the poor white, and black children also, if any such are brought to him, *gratis*, in the Principles of Christianity, and to read the Bible and the Common-prayer Book.

And Mr. Commissary *Vesey*, together with Mr. *Colgan* the Society's Missionary at *Jamaica* on *Long Island*, having recommended Mr. *John Moore*, who hath had his Education in *Yale College* in *New Haven*, and designs to offer himself a candidate for Holy Orders when the Society shall encourage him to come to *England* for them as the person most proper in the mean time to succeed to the vacant school at *Jamaica*, the Society hath condescended thereto, and if his Behaviour shall deserve it, will hereafter take farther Notice of him.¹

* * * *

And as the maintenance of a learned and orthodox Clergy abroad, though the principal, is not the only Intent of this Corporation, but they are also to make such other Provision as shall be found necessary for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts: The Society have done all in their Power to encourage the setting up of Schools, that the rising Generation may be brought up in the Nurture and Fear of the Lord, and they give Salaries to three Catechists and twelve Schoolmasters for this purpose.²

STANDING ORDERS OF THE SOCIETY FOR THE PROPAGATION OF THE GOSPEL IN FOREIGN PARTS.

* * * *

VIII. Orders relating to the Schoolmasters.

I. That no person be admitted a Schoolmaster, till he bring Certificates, with respect to the Particulars following :

1. The Age of the Person.
2. His condition of Life, whether Single, or Married.
3. His Temper.
4. His Prudence.
5. His Learning.
6. His sober and pious Conversation.
7. His Zeal for the Christian Religion, and Diligence in his Calling.

¹ Abs. of Proc., etc., 1742-3, pp. 47, 48.

² Dr. Bearcroft's Sermon before the Society, Feb. 15, 1744-45, p. 16.

8. His affection to the present Government.

9. His Conformity to the Doctrine and Discipline of the Church of *England*.

II. That no Person be sent, as a Schoolmaster by the Society, till he has been try'd and approv'd by Three Members, appointed by the Society or Committee, who shall testify, by Word or Writing, his Ability to teach Reading, Writing, and the Catechism of the Church of *England*, and such Exposition thereof, as the Society shall order.

III. That no Testimonials shall be allow'd of, but such as are signed by the respective Minister of the Parish where any such Schoolmaster sent over to the Plantations, last lived; and where that is not practicable, by some other Persons of Credit and Note, three at least, of the Communion of the Church of *England*, (whereof one to be a Clergyman) and such, as shall be well known to some of the Members of the Society.

IV. That no Testimonials, or Certificates shall be allowed of for any Schoolmaster, without first consulting the Persons, who are said to have signed such Testimonials or Certificates.

V. That all Schoolmasters, in Matters, which they desire should be laid before the Society, do correspond only with the President, or Secretary of the Society.

VI. That in order to the Keeping a due Correspondence with the Secretary, the Society's Schoolmasters do take a Receipt of the Master of the Ship (if it can be obtained) for every Letter they send to the Society, mentioning the Day and Year, when they delivered the same; And, that they keep copies of the Letters and Papers transmitted to the Society, sending Duplicates by the next Conveyance, and therewith a Copy of the Receipt for their original Letters; And also, that if the Place of their Residence be not a Sea-Port they send such Letters to one of their Brethren who resides, at such Sea-Port, desiring him to forward the same by the first Opportunity, taking the like Receipt: And lastly, that they give an Account of the Time, and the Ship's Name, by which they receive any Letter from the Society.

VII. That the School-masters, who are received into the Society's Service before the Seasons of Spring and Autumn yearly, and do not proceed on their Voyage to the Place appointed them within the respective Seasons, be dismiss'd the Service of the Society.

VIII. That if any School-master, in the Service of the Society, shall return from the Plantations, without Leave first had from the Society, such School-master shall receive no further Allowance from the Time, he shall leave his Service there.

IX. That all School-masters sent over to the Plantations by the Society, (being married Men) be oblig'd to take their Wives with them, unless they can offer such reasons, as shall induce the Society to dispense therewith.

X. That the Salary of every School-master, who is not dismissed the Service for some Misdemeanor, shall continue one Year, and no longer, after the Society have resolv'd at their Board to dismiss such Person from their Service.

XI. That the Salaries of the Society's School-masters be paid only

by *Bill of Exchange*, to be by them drawn upon the Treasurers from Time to Time, as such Salaries shall become due.¹

INSTRUCTIONS FOR SCHOOLMASTERS EMPLOYED BY THE SOCIETY, ETC.

I. That they well consider the End for which they are employed by the Society, *viz.* The instructing and disposing Children to believe and live as Christians.

II. In order to this End, that they teach them to read truly and distinctly, that they may be capable of reading the Holy Scriptures, and other pious and useful Books, for informing their Understandings and regulating their Manners.

III. That they instruct them thoroughly in the Church-Catechism; teach them first to read it distinctly and exactly, then to learn it perfectly by Heart; endeavoring to make them understand the Sense and Meaning of it, by the Help of such Expositions, as the Society shall send over.

IV. That they teach them to Write a plain and legible Hand, in order to the fitting them for useful Employments; with as much Arithmetick, as shall be necessary to the same Purpose.

V. That they be industrious, and give constant Attendance at proper School-Hours.

VI. That they daily use, Morning and Evening, the Prayers composed for their Use in this Collection with their Scholars in the School, and teach them the Prayers and Graces composed for their Use at Home.

VII. That they oblige their Scholars to be constant at Church on the Lords-Day Morning and Afternoon, and at all other Times of Publick Worship; that they cause them to carry their Bibles and Prayer Books with them, instructing them how to use them there, and how to demean themselves in the several Parts of Worship; that they be there present with them, taking Care of their reverent and decent Behavior, and examine them afterwards, as to what they have heard and learn'd.

VIII. That when any of their Scholars are fit for it, they recommend them to the Minister of the Parish, to be publickly Catechized in the Church.

IX. That they take especial Care of their Manners, both in their Schools, and out of them; warning them seriously of those Vices to which Children are most liable; teaching them to abhor Lying and Falsehood, and to avoid all Sorts of Evil-speaking; to love truth and Honesty; to be Modest, Gentle, Well-behav'd, Just and Affable, and Courteous to all, their Companions; respectful to their Superiors, particularly towards all that minister in holy Things, and especially to the Minister of their Parish; and all this from a Sense and Fear

¹ Coll. of Papers printed by order of the Society, etc., 1741, pp. 38-40.

These "Orders" were first issued as early as 1706, but they did not comprise paragraphs VI, VII, and XI, of 1741, and did include the following, as ¶ VIII, which was omitted in 1741:

"VIII. That no School-master be sent in the Society's Service till he be Episcopally Ordained Deacon; and that he have a Salary not under *Thirty Pounds per Annum*."

See Coll. of Papers, etc., 1706 (in N. Y. Hist. Soc. library), p. 69.

of Almighty God ; endeavoring to bring them in their tender Years to that Sense of Religion, which may render it the constant Principle of their Lives and Actions.

X. That they use all kind and gentle Methods in the Government of their Scholars, that they may be lov'd, as well as fear'd by them ; and that when Correction is necessary, they make the Children to understand, that it is given them out of kindness, for their Good, bringing them to a Sense of their Fault, as well as of their Punishment.

XI. That they frequently consult with the Minister of the Parish, in which they dwell, about the Methods of managing their Schools, and be ready to be advised by him.

XII. That they do, in their whole Conversation, shew themselves Examples of Piety and Virtue to their Scholars, and to all, with whom they shall converse.

XIII. That they be ready, as they have Opportunity, to teach and instruct the *Indians* and *Negroes*, and their Children.

XIV. That they send to the Secretary of the Society, once in every six Months, an Account of the State of their respective Schools, the Number of their Scholars, with the Methods and Success of their Teaching.

NOTITIA SCHOLASTICA ; or an Account to be sent every Six Months to the Society by each Schoolmaster, concerning the State of their respective Schools.

1. Attendance daily given,.....
2. Number of Children taught in the School,.....
3. Number of Children baptized in the Church of *England*,
4. Number of *Indian* and *Negro* Children,
5. Number of Children born of Dissenting Parents,
6. Other Schools in or near the Place,.....
7. Of what Denomination,.....
8. Other Employments of the Schoolmaster,.....

The Account to be attested by the Missionary (if any upon the Spot) and by some of the Principal Inhabitants.¹

The following is a list of the Schoolmasters and Catechists employed by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, in the Province of New York, from 1704 to 1782, with their respective salaries, and the number of scholars instructed, as compiled from the annual "Abstracts of Proceedings:"

¹ Coll. of Papers printed by order of the Society, etc., 1706, pp. 88-85, and 1741, pp. 20-22.

Schoolmasters and Catechists employed by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, in the Province of New York, with their respective periods of service, salaries, etc.

LOCALITIES.	NAMES OF SCHOOLMASTERS, ETC.	PERIODS OF SERVICE.	ANNUAL SALARIES.	NO. OF SCHOLARS IN ATTENDANCE.
ALBANY COUNTY.				
City of Albany, ¹	— Beasley (or Peaseley),..	1781-8 to 1782-3, ²	"A gratuity allowed,"	8 negroes (1782-3).
LONG ISLAND—QUEENS COUNTY.				
Flushing,.....	— Kneeland, Catechist,	1782-3 to 1783-4,.....	£10.	
Hempstead,.....	Thomas Gildersleeve,.....	1718-14 to 1789-90,...	10.	
	Thomas Temple (in place of Gildersleeve), dec'd, ³	1789-90 to 1792-3,.....	10.	
South of Hempstead,.....	William Leakey (or Leakey),	1769-70 to 1770-71,....	10.	
	William Leflett,.....	1774-5 to 1775-6,.....	10.	
Jamaica,.....	— Willett,.....	1729-30 to 1741-2,.....	15.	
	John Moore,.....	1742-3,.....	15.	43 (1788-9).
Oyster Bay,.....	Daniel Denton,.....	1724-5 to 1730-31,....	10.	
	— Keeble,.....	1739-80 to 1745-6,....	10,.....	27 (1787). ⁴
LONG ISLAND—SUFFOLK COUNTY.				
Huntington,.....	Saml. Seabury, Jr., Catechist,	1747-8 to 1749-50,....	10.	
	— Kneeland, do	1764-5,.....		
Southampton,.....	— Davies,.....	1729-80 to 1782-3,....	10.	
MONTGOMERY COUNTY. ⁵				
Cannoharie ("Upper Mohock Town"),.....	Daniel (Indian),.....	1743-4 to 1744-5,.....	7, 10s.	

¹ The Abstract of Proceedings for 1703-4 includes a Schoolmaster each for New York, Albany and Westchester counties among the "demands upon the Society," but states that there are "No schoolmasters yet established, but expected suddenly so to be in the Dutch as well as English counties." The "schoolmaster for Albany" was still among the "demands upon the Society" in the following year.

² H. Onderdonk, Jr.

³ The double dates in this list respectively refer to the period indicated in the title of each annual "Abstract of Proceedings," etc., as annexed to the Annual Sermon before the Society. A few of these abstracts are missing from the sets within reach of the Compiler.

⁴ See Abs. of Proc., etc., for 1788-9. ⁵ Mr. Oliver taught school among the Mohocks, about the year 1715. See, ante pp. 101, 102.

Schoolmasters and Catechists employed by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, in the Province of New York, with their respective periods of service, salaries, etc.—(Continued.)

LOCALITIES.	NAMES OF SCHOOLMASTERS, ETC.	PERIODS OF SERVICE.	ANNUAL SALARIES.	NO. OF SCHOLARS IN ATTENDANCE.
<i>Canajoharie</i> ("Upper Mohock town"),.....	Petrus Paulus, ¹	1749-50 to 1763-4,.....	£ 7, 10s.	40 (1756-7). 30 (1770-71.)
	Paulus, ²	1753-4 to 1769-70,.....	7, 10s,	
	Hall, "Instructor," ..	1770-71,.....	40.	
	Colin McLeiland.....	1770-71 to 1781-2,.....	25: then £17, 10s.	
	Cornelius Bennet, <i>Catechist</i> , ..	1762-3 to 1765-6,.....	40.	
<i>Fort Hunter</i> ("Lower Mohock town"),..... <i>Johnstown</i> ,..... NEW YORK COUNTY. <i>New York city</i> ,.....	Cornelius (Indian Sachem), ..	1749-4 to 1744-5,.....	7, 10s.	40 (1770-71.)
	Edward Wall,.....	1770-71 to 1775-6, ³	25: then £17, 10s.	
	William Huddleston,.....	1709 to 1724-5,.....	10: then £15. (A gratuity of £50 was paid to his widow, some time after his decease.)	
	Thomas Huddleston,.....	1725-6 to 1729-30,.....	20.	
	Thomas Noxon.....	1730-31 to 1742-3,.....	20,	
	Thomas Hildreth,.....	1743-4 to 1775-6,.....	10,	50 (1728-9). 40 (1732): 56 (1740-41.) 40 (1844-5), and 12 negroes: 50 (1745-6), and 15 slaves in the evening: 40 (1747-8), and 20 slaves in the evening: 60 (1762-3): 72 (1764-5): 75 (1768-9): 85 (1770-71): 86 (1773-4), 56 boys, 30 girls; also, 100 catechumens.

¹ Son of Sackern Abraham.

² A schoolmaster was supported at Sir Wm. Johnson's expense, in 1773-4. See Abs. of Proc., etc., p. 28.

³ Successor to Petrus Paulus, deceased.

Schoolmasters and Catechists employed by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, in the Province of New York, with their respective periods of service, salaries, etc.—(Continued.)

LOCALITIES.	NAMES OF SCHOOLMASTERS, ETC.	PERIODS OF SERVICE.	ANNUAL SALARIES.	NO. OF SCHOLARS IN ATTENDANCE.
NEW YORK COUNTY. <i>New York City</i> ,.....	Amos Buell,.....	1778-9 to 1781-2,.....	\$15,.....	56 boys, 80 girls (1780-81.)
	Elias Neau,.....	1704 to 1722,.....	65 negro men and women, and 28 boys and girls, in two years (1718-19, 1719-20.)
	Rev. James Wetmore, do	1723-4 to 1724-5,.....	50.	
	Rev. Thomas Colgan, do	1725-6 to 1729-30,.....	50.	
	Rev. ——— Charlton, do	1729-30 to 1743-4,.....	50.	"A great number in summer, less in winter" (1782-8): 50 white, 40 colored (1740-41); 90 white, 70 colored (1741-2.) 60 to 70 (1762-8.)
RICHMOND COUNTY. <i>"Statens Island,"</i>	Rev. Samuel Auchmuty, do	1747-8 to 1763-4,.....	50,.....	85 (1712-18.)
	Adam Brown (So. Precinct),	1710-11 to 1712-13,.....	
	Benjamin Drewitt,.....	1710-11.	10.	
	Francis Williamson,.....	1712-13,.....	10.	
	John de Puy,.....	1713-13,.....	10.	
WESTCHESTER COUNTY. <i>Miles Square</i> ,.....	Benj. Miller (West Precinct),	1713-14,.....	10.	80 (1718-14.)
	—— Taylor,.....	1717-18 to 1742-3, ..	15,.....	42 (1738-4), and night school for negroes.
	Andrew Wright,.....	1742-3 to 1745-6,.....	15.	
	—— Barrington,.....	1749-50,.....	15.	
	—— Price,.....	1753-4 to 1758-9,.....	10.	
	—— Watts,.....	1760-61,.....	10.	
	—— Egberts,.....	1763-4 to 1781-2,.....	15.	
	—— Jones (for teaching chil- dren to read, for one year),	1719-20,.....	50s.	

Schoolmasters and Catechists employed by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, in the Province of New York, with their respective periods of service, salaries, etc. — (Continued.)

LOCALITIES	NAMES OF SCHOOLMASTERS, ETC.	PERIODS OF SERVICE.	ANNUAL SALARIES.	NO. OF SCHOLARS IN ATTENDANCE.
<i>North Castle (White Plains), Rye,</i>	Flint Dwight,	1728-9 to 1742-3,	£10,	46 (1738-40.)
	Joseph Cleator,	1704 to 1780-91,	15,	30 (1711): 50 (1719-30.)
	Thomas Huddleston,	1714-15 to (?),	15 (and 5 extra),	55 (1718.)
	John Carhart, ¹	1733,	15,	
	Flint Dwight,	1738,	15,	
	Samuel Purdy,	1738-30 to 1752-3,	15,	21 (1738): 40 (1739-40.)
	William Sturgeon, B.A.,	1745-6,		
	Timothy Wetmore,	1754-5 to 1768-7,	10,	
	John Rand,	1768-70,	10,	
	John Avery,	1770-71,	10,	
<i>Westchester,</i>	James Wetmore,	1771-3 to 1781-2,	10,	10 to 12 (1774-5): 60 (1776.)
	Daniel Clarke,	1710,	18, (?)	
	Charles Glover,	1713-14,	10,	
	William Forster,	1717-18 to 1742-3,	10,	85 (1719): 30 (1721.) New school house being erected (1723-4.)
	Basil Bartowe,	1743-4 to 1760-61,	10,	
<i>Yonkers.</i> ^a	Nathaniel Seabury,	1764-5 to 1767-8,	10,	
	George Youngs,	1768-9 to 1775-6,	10,	
	— Gott, ^b	1775-6,	10,	

¹ Bolton's Hist. of the Church in West. Co., p. 351.
^a Ibid. [Mr. Dwight was at North Castle (White Plains) from 1738 to 1742. See above.]
^b Bolton's Hist. of the Church in West. Co., p. 126.

^c Ibid.

^d An allowance was made by the Society for a schoolmaster in Yonkers, during the year 1714-15, on condition of his teaching thirty children. As nothing further appears on this subject, it is presumed that the school was not opened. See Abs. of Proc., etc., 1718-14, p. 88.

As an appropriate *finale* to this list of early teachers, we quote two paragraphs from Rev. Dr. Berrian's Historical Sketch of Trinity Church, published in 1847:

There is nothing with which I have been so much struck and impressed, in the investigation of the early history of this Parish, as the zeal, the earnestness, and devotedness of the schoolmasters and catechists of that day. The former appear to have been selected from among the laity with great caution and care, and to have been persons of respectability and worth. The latter were occasionally laymen, but more commonly such as were preparing for holy orders, or who had actually received them. Some of these were men of liberal education, who in the commencement of their professional life were full of promise, and who ended it with respect and honour. But they all seem to have entered with the same spirit upon their humble labours, and to have prosecuted them with a patience, an interest, and a blessed result, which put ours to shame at the present day. Intellectual was not then, to the extent that it is now, separated from religious improvement, but both went hand in hand throughout the week. The whole of early life was, in a certain measure, devoted to Christian instruction, and not merely reserved for the scanty intervals between the hours of worship on the Lord's Day.

It is delightful to observe, in the annual reports of the schoolmasters and catechists to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, with what cheerfulness and industry they appear to have labored in their useful but lowly employment; with what particularity each addition to the number of scholars or catechumens, from year to year, is pointed out; with what pleasure each change for the better, in the spiritual condition of the negro or Indian slaves, is noticed; with what hopefulness and interest they look forward to their advancement in Christian knowledge, and how sincerely they rejoice at their growth in Grace.¹

We are indebted to Rev. Charles W. Baird, of Rye, Westchester Co., author of a valuable history of that township, for the following summary statement, in advance of the publication of his work, relative to the early schools of that locality:

Rye belonged to Connecticut until 1683. Under the old laws of that colony, every town of 50 householders was required "to appoint one to teach children to read and write." The population scarcely reached the figure previous to the year mentioned. Any efforts therefore in favour of education were voluntary. At a town meeting, April 22, 1690, a committee was chosen "to procure a minister, and *if possible a schoolmaster*." Nothing further appears on the subject till Jan. 29, 1711, when the Proprietors voted to "build a school house upon their owne charge." It was agreed that "any person or persons that will bear his or theire proportion of moneys in building the schoole house, shall have an equall privilege of the said house for

¹ Berrian's Historical Sketch of Trinity Church, New York, pp. 86, 87.



schooling with the Proprietors." This school appears to have been held where the village school stood, near the Episcopal church, until some thirty or forty years ago.

About this time there were other schools in different parts of the town. In 1716, we hear of "a travelling woman who came out of y^e Jerseys, who kept school at several places in Rye parish." "As to schools," writes the Rev. James Wetmore in 1728, "there are *several poor ones* in different parts of the parish. Where a number of families live near together, they hire a man and woman at a cheap rate, subscribing every one what they will allow. Some masters get £20 per annum and their diet; but there is no public provision at all for a school in this parish."

The Society in England "for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts," supported a schoolmaster at Rye, from 1707, till the period of the Revolution. The first schoolmaster was Mr. Joseph Cleator, 1707-1732.¹ In 1714, a Mr. Huddleston was also engaged, under the Society's care, in teaching in some parts of the parish of Rye, which included the towns of Bedford, Mamaroneck and Rye—Rye itself at that time comprehending Harrison and the White Plains.

From 1734 to 1745, Mr. Flint Dwight taught a school, under the same auspices, at the White Plains. At Rye, Mr. Cleator was succeeded in 1733 by Mr. Samuel Purdy, who continued till 1749, when he removed to the White Plains, where he died in 1753. Timothy Wetmore succeeded him at Rye till 1769, when his brother James took the school, but gave it up at the outbreak of the Revolution.

The number of children attending the Society's school at different periods is stated as follows:

In 1719, Mr. Cleator taught 50 pupils. In 1736, Mr. Dwight taught 46, and Mr. Purdy 41. In 1776, Mr. Wetmore's school numbered 71.

As to the kind of instruction, we learn from John Adams, who visited the place in 1774, that it was purely elementary. "They have a school for *writing and cyphering*, but no grammar school."

There was a school-house on Rye Neck, or Budd's Neck, as it was then called, as early as 1739; and one in the neighbourhood of Sawpit, now Port Chester, a few years before the Revolution. Little is known about them.

The "travelling woman who came out of y^e Jerseys and kept school at several places in Rye Parish," is the second school *mistress* in the Province of whom we have any record, Rachel Spencer having been the first.² At a much later period, the girls in Mr. Hildreth's school, at N. Y. city, "in the afternoon learned to write, being the rest of the day under the care of a school mistress employed by the Vestry," by whom they were "taught needlework."³

¹ It will be observed that Mr. Baird's statistics differ in a few cases from those contained in the foregoing tabular list of schoolmasters in Westchester Co. The local annalist may be more generally correct, though some of the Prop. Soc. Reports seem not to have been consulted by him; while others have not been accessible to us.

² *Ante*, p. 69.

³ *Abs. of Proc.*, etc., 1762-3, p. 77; 1764-5, p. 73.

In connection with the foregoing sketch of schools established and sustained in the interest of the Church of England, it is appropriate to insert a statement kindly furnished by Mr. Henry Onderdonk, Jr., relative to both the English and the Dutch primers for the instruction of children in those early days:

Religion was the leading idea in Dutch (as well as English) teaching. I have a Dutch Primer, or A. B. C. Book, as it is called, (Amsterdam), similar to our *New England Primer*. It has a large rooster on one page, and a picture of a Dutch school on the other. The master has a cap on his head and a bunch of twigs in his hand. The class stands before him and other boys are seated at their desks. After a very little spelling, succeeds the Lord's Prayer, Creed, Decalogue, Morning and Evening Prayer, Grace before and after meat. The instruction is altogether religious, which feature (I suppose) is retained in our Catholic schools to this day.

* * * *

The Episcopalians also had their Primer corresponding to the Dutch and New England Primers. I have one (once the property of Rev. Thos. Poyer, 1709-30, of this place) [Jamaica, L. I.] adapted for children. The prayer, etc., have the long words all divided into syllables, thus: Com-mand-ment.

Replying to an inquiry relative to the early schools of Queens county, Mr. Onderdonk says:

Our county (Queens) was settled from Kings, from 1670, or thereabouts, to 1720. So there could not have been any Dutch schools at the early date you require, except in some Dutch neighborhoods. Under the English Government, private or subscription schools were to be found all over the country. In some neighborhoods Dutch wast taught.

In the same communication, Mr. Onderdonk incidentally refers to an early schoolmaster at Flat Lands, Kings county, of whom we have seen no other notice. He says:

I have an old school bill in Dutch, 1708, written by Isaac Selover in a beautiful hand. He was teacher at Flatlands in 1695 and onward.

The following is a copy of the school bill referred to, and a translation of the same (with an added remark in brackets), by Mr. Onderdonk:

1708. Jacobus Montfort hebben ter school geweest vanden 4^{Meij} den 4^{Julij} is 2 maanden | nu' vanden 2 Sep^r tot den 2 Octobg is een maant — samen 3 manden

Comt / 10 gl

I. SELOOVER

Schoolm^r

(Translation).

1708. Jacobus Montfort hath been to school from May 4th to July 4th, which is 2 months [staid home probably to help his father in

harvest time, July and August] now, from the 2^d Sept. to the 2^d Octob^r is one month, altogether 3 months

Comes to 10 guilders.

I. SELOVER,
Schoolm^r.

Mr. Onderdonk further states :

Georgius Sheriosby¹(?) writes his name, 1721, in an old volume of Sermons as "Schoolmaster on Cow Neck." Should perhaps be "*Thoresby*," as that is a true English name.

James Loquart kept school at Jamaica, in 1722; Thomas Temple,² and William Rock, in 1731; Thomas Lynstead, at Oyster Bay, and elsewhere, in 1723.

Of the schools founded and for a time sustained by the "Venerable Society," one at least has been continued without interruption until the present time, viz.: the so-called "Trinity School," of New York city. We cannot better exhibit its early history and condition than by quoting from Rev. Dr. McVickar's Discourse, delivered Dec. 20, 1859, at the celebration of the One Hundred and Fiftieth Anniversary of the School; premising, however, that in the light of the foregoing Annals, Trinity School is hardly entitled to be called "the earliest of its [N. Y. city's] schools in the English tongue;" the Grammar Free School, for example, having already closed its career³ at the time when Trinity School claims to have been founded:

The antiquity of Trinity School (if such a term may be used in our land of yesterday) deepens further the interest with which this city at least should regard it; for it was the earliest of its schools in the English tongue, as well as the earliest that taught its children the doctrines and worship of the Church, in one of whose Sanctuaries we are now assembled; a school that goes back to within one hundred years of the first discovery of our noble river, to within thirty years of the origin of the city's name, a name then the badge of recent conquest, now of world-wide fame, New York. It goes back to the very infancy of our great metropolis, when its streets could be counted on the fingers of a single hand; when its bounds had scarce transcended the favorite swamp of its original Dutch settlers; when its population was but that of a village, less than five thousand; its commerce that of a country store-keeper, exporting raw produce to the amount of eight thousand pounds (sterling). It is a school whose antiquity goes beyond the age of every educational institution throughout our wide-spread land, with the exception of three among its thousand, viz.: Harvard College, founded A. D. 1636, William and Mary College, in 1691, and Yale College, in the year 1700. Let us then pay to Trinity School the reverence at least due to age.

¹ There is a provoking uncertainty about the letters. I write it as was copied by a friend; but I add a fac-simile. The original is in the possession of Mr. Clarkson, Clermont, N. Y.

² Mr. Temple subsequently taught at Hempstead. See *ante*, p. 111.

³ *Ante*, pp. 76-89.

Its beginnings, however, were as humble as the intellectual needs it came to satisfy. To teach the poor without charge; to instruct Dutch children in the English tongue, and to train up all in the nurture and admonition of the Lord, with its secular teaching, carried on in some rented room for the reception of its obligated forty scholars, and its religious instruction, including Church Psalmody, given in the porch of Trinity Church, then but recently erected; or rather, as the original report has it, "in the steeple" of the church (a term, however, not to be literally interpreted, inasmuch as its catechumens often amounted to the number of two hundred); these were the simple and lowly, yet blessed labors of the early teachers and catechists of Trinity School; carried on under the sanction and general guidance of the Venerable Society in England for "Promoting the Gospel in Foreign Parts," by whom its teachers and catechists were appointed upon recommendation from the Vestry, with the primitive salary of from ten to fifteen pounds (sterling); and under the obligation of instructing for the same at least forty scholars, the Society supplying them also by occasional gifts with Bibles and Prayer-books for the school and for distribution. All else for the needs of the School, as well as for the support of its teachers, rested upon Trinity Church, by whose care these primitive salaries were from the first at least doubled, though attaching to their appointment incidental duties; while to both teacher and catechist position in society was further given by annually electing them members of the vestry, its first incumbents having held such position, one for nine, the other for fourteen years, until the period of their death; all which details, touching Trinity Church, are here given, not as diminishing in aught the liberality or zeal of the Venerable Society to whose bounty and care, not the School only, but the whole Church, was so deeply indebted; but in justice to a Corporation which thus early began the patronage of education in our Church and City, and which it this day becomes the earliest recipient of its bounty thankfully to record. How small, too, at this time were its own means of support, may be judged from the rental of its recent endowment, then, as now, its only property, the King's Farm, amounting to but £35 New York currency. . . . Of the long list of teachers and catechists thus appointed from the year 1709, to the period of separation of the colonies from the mother country, I name but the first of each, viz.: William Huddleston, "teacher," of whom little is recorded beyond his laboring "faithfully and successfully" in his fourteen years incumbency, and as being followed in it by his son. Of the first "catechist," however, Elias Nau [Neau] by name, more may be said; . . . as bringing home the Church and its services to the love and affection of all classes, to the children, to the common people, to the negro slaves, and even to the native Indians, who still swarmed in the town. The memory of these early teachers is indeed past; but their example remains, bringing a blessing, we may trust, on the School's present labors. * *

In 1748, Trinity Church erected a building for the School's accommodation on ground contiguous to the church. This being destroyed by fire at the very moment of its completion, . . . a second

structure was with difficulty, through want of means, erected, and that only by aid of liberal gifts brought forth by its misfortune. . . . Up to the year 1776, the School continued under the joint patronage and care of the Venerable Society and Trinity Church, its support resting mainly upon the latter. Upon the breaking out of that contest among brethren, its doors were for a time closed, its teachers scattered; and, in the subsequent great fire that desolated our city, the school-house shared the fate of its only patron, and was laid in ashes. But with the close of that contest came a new era in its history; Trinity School becoming legally and by name, what in truth and practice it had long been, the School of Trinity Church, and a commodious building erected for its accommodation.¹

The following paragraph, containing an allusion to Samson Occom, noted as a preacher, and as the author of the hymn, "Awaked by Sinai's awful sound," etc., is appropriate in this connection:

In 1741, the Society for Propagating the Christian Religion among the Indians of New England [Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts], . . . appointed the Rev'd Azariah Horton a missionary among the Montauketts. . . . Subsequently, there were a number of Indian preachers and teachers among them; but the most distinguished was Sampson Ocum [Samson Occom], a Mohegan, who was born in 1723, and educated in Connecticut by Mr. Wheelock and Mr. Pomeroy. He opened a school on Montauk in 1755, and also preached there from that date until 1761.² * *

The importance and steady continuance of the educational work carried on by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, have induced us to present the whole of this subject consecutively, and to defer for the time being our notice of contemporary teachers and schools. We now recur to the date at which the special narrative just referred to commenced, to gather up what still remains of educational interest for so much of the same period as precedes the year 1746, the general limit, as to time, of the present chapter.

A colony of Palatines having settled, in 1710, upon a portion of the Livingston Manor, a school-house was erected soon after, as appears by the following record:

I acknowledge to hav. Received of Robert Livingston 40 Boards for y^e School house in y^e paletyeyn town called Queensberry³ & desire s^d Livingston to send for y^e s^d use 30 Boards now to Compleat y^e School house.

dated this 18 Jan'y 1711

JOH. FR. HÄYER, Min.⁴

¹ One Hundred and Fiftieth Anniversary of Trinity School, pp. 14-17.

² Gardiner's Chronicles of Easthampton, pp. 70, 71.

³ One of the four Palatine villages established about the year 1710, and collectively known as the "East Camp." These villages were within the limits of the present town of Germantown, Columbia county.

⁴ Doc. Hist. of N. Y., iii, 668 (8^o ed.); 400 (4^o ed.).

The existence of the first English school west of Albany, of which we have seen any mention, has been recently declared, as follows:

* * Schenectady had its first school in the English tongue in 1710.¹ * * *

No reference to original records is given in support of this statement, and nothing further has come under our notice to substantiate it.

The following petition preserves the name of a schoolmaster, who might otherwise, perhaps, be unknown at this time:

To His Excellency Robert Hunter Esq^r Capt. Generall and Governour in Cheife of y^e Province of New York New Jersey and Territories thereon depending in America and Vice Admirall of y^e same &c.

The humble Petition of Anthony Gleane [Glead^s] of fflushing in Queens County Blacksmith Dec'd (sic)

SHEWETH

That one James Battersby, late of fflushing aforesaid Schoolmaster Dece^d lately Dyed Intestate there being in his life time and y^e time of his Decease Considerably Indebted to yo^r Petitioner for Lodging and otherwise and having noe relation in these parts Your petitioner was at y^e expence of his funerall and y^e said Deceased have some small estate in Goods & Chattells within this Province tho' hardly soe much as yo^r Petitioner beleives to Reimburse what is due to yo^r Petitioner from y^e said Intestate.

Your Petitioner therefore most humbly prays yo^r Excellency will be pleased to Grant him Letters of Administration of y^e Estate of y^e said Dece'd within this province as principle Creditor of y^e said Intestate.

And yo^r Petitioner shall ever pray &c.

ANTHONY GLEANE

New York 12th August 1715.

I direct Letters of Administration to be granted of y^e said Intestate's Estates to y^e petitioner according to y^e prayer of y^e said Petition

RO. HUNTER^s

It appears from the annexed quotation, that a Latin school was once established in the city of New York, under the care of Mr. David Jamison, who was also subsequently Clerk of the Council, Secretary and Attorney-General of the Province, Chief Justice of New Jersey, etc.:

¹ Sup't Rice's Special Report on the Condition of Education, 1867, p. 78.

² H. Onderdonk, Jr.

³ N. Y. Col. MSS., 1x, 86.

*Governor Hunter to the Lords of Trade.*New York Oct^r 2^d 1716.

* * * *

Mr. David Jamison is the same person mentioned in the extracts of the Earl of Bellomonts letter to your Board, tho' much different in his character and conduct from what he is represented there to be.

The real truth is this M^r Jamison after a liberal education at schools and Colleges in Scotland from some discontent the prejudice of education or the folly and heat of youth, or all of them together, took occasion to join himself to that multitude which in the end of King Charles y^e seconds reign, were called by the name of sweet singers. . . . He was in company with others of that sort when taken prisoner by a party of the Kings forces.

One Lockhart who had a ship boun[d] for America was ordered by the Govern^t to go to the house where they were kept, and know of them whether they would voluntarily go on board with him for America. . . . being arrived here the minister of the Fort M^r Clarke paid M^r Jamisons passage, and the chief men in the place reimbursed M^r Clarke and set him to teach a lattin school, which he attended for some time with great industry and success, but finding that incouragement but small, he entred himself into the Secretary's office.¹

* * * *

We have failed, after considerable search, to find any other allusion to this Latin School, and can only infer from the last sentence of the above extract, in connection with the fact that Mr. Jamison was Clerk of the Council as early as 1693,² that it was established as early as about the year 1690.

The following fragments, gleaned from the town records of Hempstead, L. I., may be regarded as one brief chapter in the school history of that locality, which seems entitled to the credit of having the third school, in the order of time, on Long Island. The first paragraph properly belongs to the Dutch period, and might have been inserted on page 36, *ante* :

Education was not neglected by the settlers [of Hempstead]; for we find that the town (in 1658) devoted the fines from unlicensed dram-sellers to the schooling of poor orphans.

Richard Gildersleeve, who gave place to Richard Charlton in 1670, succeeded Jonas Houldsworth, who taught in 1662.

In 1702, the town voted 100 acres of land for a free school; also timber for building, fencing and firewood.

In 1707, four acres of land, west of the meeting house pond, were granted to "settle a school master upon for to teach our children—the land to be for the use and privilege of a school forever."³

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., v, 478.

² N. Y. Col. Doc., iii, 227.

³ Onderdonk's Hist. Sketch of Ancient Agriculture, etc., in Hempstead (included in 26th Ann. Rep. of Queens Co. Agri. Soc.), p. 63.

1722, April 3.—By major vote a 3 acre lot that was granted for a school is now given to justice Tredwell. Thos. Gildersleeve, Schoolmaster, protests against this vote.

1732, April 4.—To Benj. Valentine is given all the timber left about the school house. The bricks left are to be allowed for the Parsonage chimneys and house. The town schoolhouse lot is let to Col. Jno. Treadwell for 27s the present year.

1737, April 5.—By major vote Rev. Robt. Jenny has the privilege of enclosing and using the schoolhouse lot till the Town shall have occasion of it for a school or schoolmaster.¹

The annexed advertisements, copied from early volumes of the *New York Gazette*, the first newspaper published in the Colony of New York, are probably the earliest specimens of this method of recruiting scholars (now so extensively relied upon), employed within the limits of this State:

On the 15th of *September* next, at the Custom House in this City (where a convenient Room is fitted up) *James Lyde* designs to Teach in the Evenings (during the Winter) *Arithmetick*, in all its parts, *Geometry*, *Trigonometry*, *Navigation*, *Surveying*, *Guaging*, *Algebra*, and sundry other parts of *Mathematical Learning*, Whoever inclines to be instructed in any of the said Parts of *Mathematical Knowledge*, may agree with the said *James Lyde* at the House of *William Bradford* in the City of *New York*. [*New York Gazette*, Numb. 254², *Aug.* 31 to *Sept.* 7, 1730.]³

At the house of *George Brownell*, near the Custom-House, are taught *Reading*, *Writing*, *Cyphering*, *Merchants Accounts*, *Latin*, *Greek*, &c., also *Dancing*, *Plain-work*, *Flourishing*, *Imbroidery*, and various Sorts of Works. Any persons may be taught as private as they please. [*New York Gazette*, Numb. 295⁴, *June* 14, to *June* 21, 1731.]

Edward Gatehouse, Writing Master, hereby gives Notice, That many or the greater part of his scholars being sick of the Small Pox, he takes this Opportunity, on an Extraordinary Occasion to go into the Country, and in ten days intends to be back to attend his School. [*New York Gazette*, Numb. 311², *Oct.* 4 to *Oct.* 11, 1731.]

Grammar, *Writing*, *Arithmetic Vulgar & Decimal*, Taught by *William Thurston*, School-Master in *New York*, dwelling at the Corner-House by *Koenties Market*, over against the Skotch Arms. [*New York Gazette*, Numb. 358⁴, *Aug.* 28 to *Sept.* 4, 1732.]

This is to give Notice, That over against the Sign of the black Horse in *Smith-Street*, near the old *Dutch Church*, is carefully taught the *French* and *Spanish* Languages, after the best Method that is now practized in *Great Britain*, which for the encouragement of those who intend to learn the same, is taught for 20s. per Quarter.

Note, that the said Person teaches *Reading*, *Writing* and *Arith-*

¹ Hempstead Records, as furnished by H. Onderdonk, Jr.

² The superior figure affixed to the number of the newspaper, indicates the page on which the school notice occurs.

metick, at very reasonable Terms, which is per Quarter for Readers, 5s. for Writers 8s. for Cypherers 12. [New York Gazette, Numb. 511, Aug. 4 to Aug. 11, 1735.]

NOTICE, *That the Subscriber, late from Old England, intends (as soon as the Weather is warmer and proper Encouragement be given)*

To teach Writing in all its Hands, Arithmetick and Latin, (as also to teach the Grammar Schollars twice a Day Writing, gratis.)

Whoever is willing to encourage him in so commendable a Work, and so requisite in this flourishing City, may, at Mr. Wood Furman's in Wall-street, agree with on that subject,

CHARLES JOHNSTON.

[New-York Weekly Post-Boy, Numb. 59⁴, March 5, 1743-4 (Parker).]

Similar advertisements of later dates are reserved for a subsequent chapter.

The establishment, in 1732, of "a public school to teach Latin, Greek and Mathematics, in the City of New York," under authority of an act of the General Assembly of the Province, may be regarded as an event of considerable interest in the history of public education in this Colony; though, like the Grammar Free School of 1702-9, it seems to have flourished during a period of only about seven years. Both the schools referred to may have been vitally, if not formally, connected with the repeated proposals and attempts, beginning as early as 1703, to found a college in this Province; though of this there seems to be no official evidence. Having consulted several historical sketches of Columbia (formerly King's) College, for founding which legislative provision began to be made in 1746, we find no statement or suggestion that this earliest New York college had for its germ any pre-existing school whatever. Still, we can hardly doubt that there was some vital relation between the various movements, however spasmodic and disconnected, which gave corporate existence, first to two temporary institutions of the academic grade, and finally to a permanent college.

Since writing the foregoing paragraph, we are gratified to find our inference on this point confirmed by the late Hon. Benjamin F. Butler, who, in an anniversary address delivered before the Albany Institute, in 1830, refers to Mr. Malcolm's school, and remarks that it "is said to have formed the germ of Columbia College."¹ He cites, as authority for this statement, Smith's History of New York, which speaks of the movement for founding a College as "a project early in the eye of the patrons of the public school, formerly trusted to the

¹ Albany Institute Transactions, i, 179.

care of Mr. Malcolm, favored by the pupils of that institution now rising to manhood, and forced by a general spirit of emulation on discovering the sundry advantages our youth had acquired by an academical education in Great Britain and Ireland, but chiefly at the neighboring Colleges of New England.”¹

The official history of the passage of the above mentioned act of 1732, is an appropriate preface to the act itself:

[*In General Assembly.*]

Die Martis 9 ho. A. M. Oct. 3, 1732.

The Petition of sundry Gentlemen, and others, whose Names are thereunto subscribed, was presented to the House, and read, praying the Permission of this House, for bringing in a Bill to establish a perpetual Support for a Master, to teach Latin and Greek.

Ordered, That Leave be given to bring in a Bill for encouraging a public School, to teach Latin, Greek, Arithmetick, and the Mathematicks, in the City of *New-York*; and that for the Encouragement of a School Master for that Purpose, the unappropriated Money, to rise by the Act for licensing Hawkers and Pedlars, until the first Day of *December*, 1737, be applied for that End; and that the said City make up the Income of that Fund annually, during that Time, to the Sum of Pounds; and that in Consideration thereof, the said School Master shall be obliged to teach gratis, the Number of Children.

* * * *

Die Jovis, 9 ho. A. M. Oct. 5, 1732.

* * * *

Mr. *DeLancey* (according to Leave) presented to the House, a Bill, entitled, *An Act, to encourage a publick School, in the City of New-York, for teaching Latin, Greek and Mathematicks*; which was read the first Time, and ordered to be read a second Time.

* * * *

Die Martis, 9 ho. A. M. Oct. 10, 1732.

* * * *

The Bill, entitled, *An Act, to encourage a public School* [etc., as above]; was read the second Time, and committed to a Committee of the whole House,

* * * *

Die Jovis, 9 ho. A. M. Oct. 12, 1732.

Mr. *Garritsen* reported from the Committee of the whole House, to whom was referred, the Bill, entitled, [as above]; That they had gone through the Bill, and made several Amendments, and added several Clauses thereto, which they had directed him to report to the House; which were read, and agreed unto by the House.

Ordered, That the Bill with the Amendments and Clauses be ingrossed.

* * * *

¹ Smith's Hist. of N. Y. (Hist. Soc. ed. 1829), ii, 93.

Die Jovis, 3 ho. P. M. Oct. 12, 1732.

The engrossed Bill, entitled, [as above]; was read the third Time.
Resolved, That the Bill do pass.

Ordered, That Major *Rensselaer* do carry the Bill to the Council, and desire their Concurrence thereto.

* * * *

At a Council held at ffort George in New York, the 13th day of October, 1732.

A Message from the Assembly by Major Van Rensselaer with the Bill Entitled, An Act to encourage a publick School in the City of New York for teaching Latin, Greek and Mathematics and desiring the Concurrence of this Board thereto.

Ordered, that the said Bill be read

Then the said Bill was read the 1st time &

Ordered a second reading.

Post Meridiem.

The Bill entitled, An Act [etc., as above] was read a second time and committed to the Gentlemen of the Council or any five of them

October 14th, 1732.

* * * *

Mr Harrison Chairman of the Committee (to whom the Bill Entitled, An Act [etc., as above] was committed) reported from the said Committee that they were ready to make their report thereof when this Board wo'd please to receive the Same.

Ordered, that the said report be made immediately

Then Mr Harrison in his place reported from the Said Committee that they had gone through the said Bill without any amendments

Which report was agreed to & approved of by the Board

Ordered, that the said Bill be read the third time

Then the said Bill was read the third time and past without any amendments

Ordered, that Mr Harrison do acquaint the House of Representatives therewith

* * * *

[In General Assembly.]

Die Sabatii, 9 ho. A. M. Oct. 14, 1732.

A Message from the Council, by Mr. *Harrison*, that they had agreed to the Bill, entitled, [as above]; without any Amendments.

* * * *

[On the same day, His Excellency, Governor Cosby, gave his assent to this and other Bills.]

The annexed copy of the aforesaid act, is a transcript from the original manuscript in the office of the Secretary of State, as we have been unable to find it in print:

AN ACT to encourage a PUBLIC SCHOOL in the City of New York for teaching Latin, Greek and Mathematicks.

Whereas, good Learning is not only a very great Accomplishment but the properest Means to attain knowledge, Improve the Mind, Morality and good Manners, and to make Men better, wiser and more useful to their Country as well as to themselves.

And Whereas, the City and Colony of New York, abounds with Youths of a Genius not Inferior to other Countries, it must undoubtedly be a Loss to the Public and a Misfortune to such Youths if they are destitute of the Opportunity to improve their Capacities by a Liberal Education.¹

And Whereas, the Mayor and Aldermen and a great Number of the principal Inhabitants of the said City of New York have by their petition to the General Assembly set forth that One M^r. Alexander Malcolm has by keeping of a private School within the said City given a satisfactory proof of his Abilities to teach Latin Greek and the Mathematics; But as the Income of that School does at present fall short of a comfortable Support for himself and his Family They humbly pray he may have a suitable Encouragement to keep a public School amongst us under such Regulations and Restrictions as may answer that End.

And altho' the not rightly applying of a temporary Salary heretofore allowed for a Free School, has been the chief Cause that an Encouragement for the like Purpose has ever since been neglected; But in as much as the present Circumstances afford a better Prospect, and to the End our Youth may not be deprived of the Benefits before mentioned, *Be it Enacted* by his Excellency the Governour the Council and the General Assembly, And it is hereby enacted by the Authority of the same That there shall be one Public School established and kept in the City of New York to teach Latin, Greek and all the Parts of Mathematicks from the First Day of December next ensuing to the First Day of December which will be in the year One Thousand Seven Hundred and Thirty Seven, and that the above named Alexander Malcolm shall be Master thereof during that Time under the Regulations and Restrictions, and for the Reward and Encouragement herein after mentioned.

Be it further Enacted by the same Authority that the above named School Master or the School Master of such School for the Time being, shall for and in Consideration of the Encouragement hereinafter mentioned, be and hereby is obliged during the Time aforesaid to provide at his own Cost and Charge in the said City of New York a proper and convenient House or Room, and therein during the Time and Term aforesaid (Sundays and the usual Holydays only excepted) to teach Gratis and without any further or other Reward or Consideration from any Person whatever than what is allowed to him by this Act, in the best Manner he is able, the Latin

¹ Governor De Witt Clinton, in his discourse before the alumni of Columbia College, in 1827, refers to this preamble as a proof that at that early period it was thought necessary to vindicate our country from the aspersions of foreigners. See a foot note of Mr. Butler's Discourse, already quoted in Alb. Inst. Trans., i, 179.

and Greek Languages, Arithmetic, and all the other Branches of the Mathematicks, or in such of them as the said School Master shall be ordered and directed by the Persons hereinafter vested with the power to give such Orders and Directions the Number of Twenty Youths in the Proportion following, that is to say

For the City and County of New York, Ten. For the City and County of Albany, Two. For Kings County, One. For Queens County, One. For Suffolk County, One. For Westchester County, One. For Richmond County, One. For Orange County, One. For Ulster County, One; and for Dutchess County One.

Be it further Enacted by the Authority aforesaid that the Youths so to be taught are to be recommended in Manner following, that is to say; For the Cities and Counties of New York and Albany, by the Respective Mayors, Recorders and Aldermen thereof. And for the several Counties by the Justices at the General Sessions of the Peace to be held for those Counties respectively. And in such Recommendations under their Hands they are respectively to certify the Name and Names of such Youth, their age (which is not to be under Fourteen Years) and that they have been well instructed in Reading and Writing of English. And in such Certificate is to be added a Command to the Schoolmaster for the Time being, to receive such Youth as a Scholar; who is accordingly to receive them in his School and to teach him or them in such Manner as he by such Certificate or Order shall be directed. And the Persons aforesaid are hereby empowered and directed not only to grant such Certificates and Orders Gratis, But in like Manner from Time to Time to supply such Vacancies, as shall or may, happen in the said School in the said Number of Youths by Death or otherwise during the Continuance of the said Act.

And be it Enacted by the same Authority that if the said Mr. Malcolm or the School Master for the Time being shall at any Time during the Term aforesaid refuse to receive or teach the Youths sent to him for that Purpose in the Manner above mentioned, it shall absolutely barr him of the Reward by this Act allowed to him *Provided* the Number of such Youths do not exceed the Number herein before limited: Nor shall it be deemed a Default in him if either of the said Cities or any of the said Counties shall at any Time recommend or send a less Number than they hereby have a Right to do.

And to the End the School hereby intended may be duely and orderly kept and the aforesaid Scholars well instructed *Be it further Enacted* by the same Authority that the Justices of the Supreme Court, The Rector of Trinity Church and the Mayor, Recorder and Aldermen of the City of New York for the Time being or the Major Part of them shall be and hereby are empowered constituted and appointed Visitors of the said School for the Term aforesaid and vested with a Power to remove the Master for the Time being for Misbehaviour or Neglect of his Duty and upon his Remove to elect appoint and establish another in his Place; as also whenever the Master's Place is void by any other Means whatsoever during the Term aforesaid the Visitors aforesaid or the Major Part of them are

hereby further authorized and empowered to elect appoint and establish a Master in such Place so become void; And the Master so by them elected appointed and established shall be entitled to the Salary or Reward hereby intended for the Master aforesaid.

Provided and Be it Enacted by the same Authority that the before named Alexander Malcolm hereby appointed Master of the said Public School shall not be removed during the Term aforesaid except for Misbehaviour or Neglect of his Duty in the keeping of the said School or in teaching of the Youth in Manner aforesaid.

And that the said M^r. Malcolm, or the School Master for the Time being of the Public School before mentioned may be enabled to provide a proper School and be encouraged to teach the said Number of Youth in Manner as aforesaid *Be it Enacted* by the same Authority that after the Money already appropriated in and by an Act Entitled An Act for reviving an Act Entitled An Act for Licencing Hawkers and Pedlars within this Colony and for paying the Sum of Sixty Pounds unto Richard Bradley Esq^r passed this present Session shall be paid and discharged out of that Fund; All the Residue of the Money that shall arise from thence forward until the First Day of December which will be in the Year One Thousand Seven Hundred and Thirty Seven by Virtue of the said Act shall be and hereby is applied for and towards the Encouragement of such School Master as aforesaid. And for the orderly and effectual paying of the same to him, The Treasurer of this Colony shall be and hereby is enjoined yearly and every Year during the Continuance of the said Act to state an Account of that Fund deducting out of the Money that has already arisen or may arise thereby Six Pence in the Pound for his receiving and paying the same, as likewise what by the said Act and a former Act he has been directed to pay out of the same: Which Account so stated he is hereby further enjoined annually between the First and the Tenth Day of December to deliver unto his Excellency the Governour who is thereupon requested to issue Warrants in Council for so much as by such Account shall appear to be in the Treasury by Virtue of that Fund payable to the said M^r Malcolm, or to the Schoolmaster for the time being: Which Warrants the said Treasurer is hereby likewise directed from Time to Time to pay and discharge out of the said Fund accordingly.

And for a further Encouragement to the said School Master or the School Master for the Time being *Be it Enacted* by the Authority aforesaid That over and above the Sum or Sums of Money annually to be raised in the City of New York, by Virtue of an Act Entitled an Act for settling a Ministry and raising a Maintenance for them in the City of New York Counties of Richmond Westchester and Queens County passed in the Fourth Year of King William and Queen Mary there shall at the same Time in the same Manner and by the same persons be assessed levied and collected and yearly paid to the Treasurer of the said City during the Continuance of this Act the Sum of *Fourty Pounds* Currant Money of this Colony besides the Charge of collecting and paying the same, For which Sum so to be annually paid during the said Term the Mayor of the said City for the Time being in Common Council convened is yearly to issue

Warrants for the same on the said City Treasurer payable Quarterly to the above named M^r Malcolm or the School Master for the Time being. And the said Mayor, the said Treasurer and all Persons who are to assess levy and collect the above mentioned Tax for the Minister and Poor are hereby strictly charged and commanded to act conformable to the true Intent and Meaning of this Clause.

Always Provided and Be it further Enacted by the same Authority that whenever the Fund of Hawkers and Pedlars shall during the Term aforesaid happen to exceed the Sum of Fourty Pounds per Annum such Overplus shall remain in the Treasury, so Nevertheless as that the said Sallary for the whole Five Years out of the said Fund does not fall short of the Sum of Two Hundred Pounds any Thing herein to the contrary thereof notwithstanding.

And be it further Enacted by the Authority aforesaid That this act shall be deemed a public Act and accepted as such in all Courts and by all Officers within this Colony.

New York Oct 14th 1732

I assent to this bill
enacting the same &
order it to be enrolled

W. COSBY.

City of New York, Die Jovis, 12th October 1732,

In the Sixth Year of his Majesties Reign

Generall Assembly for the Colony of New York,

This bill having been Read three times

Resolved That the bill do Pass

By order of the Generall Assembly

A. D. PHILIPSE Speaker

Die Jovis 12 Oct 1732 This Bill being Passed *Ordered*, That Maj Van Kensselaer do carry the Bill to the Council & desire their concurrence thereto.

G. LUDLOW Clk

1732, Oct 13th read the first time and ordered a second reading

P. M. read a second time and committed.

14th reported by M^r. Harrison without amendt read y^e third time & past M^r. Harrison to acquaint y^e house therewith.

FREDK MORRIS

The following newspaper announcements are, for the present at least, our only sources of information relative to the internal management of Mr. Malcolm's School:

Alexander Malcolm, Master of the Grammar-School in the City of *New York*, desires to represent to the Publick, the great Disadvantages to Education, by Scholars who are meer beginners in *Latin*, dropping into a School at different and uncertain times; The Consequence of which is, that a Teacher can take charge of but very few, since one or two in the same Form of Lesson, take up as much time as a dozen, (which is the present case of the School) or he must make very slow and tedious Work of it, if there be many. Then again, On the Scholars parr [part], this Circumstance make their Coming both unpleasant, and consequently lingering, for want of Companions of their Studies; and less successful, for want of that Emulation among Scholars in the same Form, which is a great Spur to their Application. Upon these Considerations it is, that in

all well regulated Schools, there are certain stated Times, at which only Beginners in Latin are received to school. As the Public School in this place begins to thrive, and 'tis hoped, will do so more and more, from a growing Sense of the value of Education, and the very apt Genius of your Youth, with the successful Progress many have already made (for which an Appeal to proper Judges would be gladly submitted to) Mr. *Malcolm* does therefore hope, the Publick will look upon it as a Proposal made for the benefit of their Children, That there be a stated time for entering such as are to begin; and tho' once a year, as the most reasonable, is the Method of the best Schools in our Mother Country (whom we will not, sure, be ashamed of for a Pattern) and [and] will be absolutely necessary when this School grows Numerous; yet in the meantime he proposes, Twice a year, viz. the Months of *February* and *August*, in which he will receive meer Beginners in *Latin*. And as he has laid this Proposal before the Visitors of the School, and the same is approved of and consented to by them, he Resolves to take none but within these Times (excepting such as are fit to joyn some of the Forms that are in the School.)

As the Continuance of this Advertisement for a sufficient Time, will give due Information of this useful and necessary Rule, so no body can be baulked or disappointed but through their own fault, and will therefore have no reason to complain of it, Whoever then have Children fit, and designed for the School, will be pleased to consider this in time, and contribute what's so easily in their power to bring the Publick Education upon an orderly and advantageous footing.

There having been some Complaints, *That the younger Scholars at this School are in hazard of losing their Writing, through the loss of Time and Diversion, occasioned by their going from one School to another.* Mr. *Malcolm* acquaints the Publick, That he has appointed a convenient hour every day, in which he Teaches Writing to such of his Latin Scholars as think fit to employ him.

At the said School are Taught all the Branches of the *Mathematicks, Geometry, Algebra, Geography, Navigation, and Merchants Book-keeping* after the most Perfect manner. [New-York Gazette, Numb. 480³, Dec. 30 to Jan. 7, 1734.]

Some Persons Having been Disapprehended, because of their having either forgot, or never seen the Advertisement that was formerly made upon settling the Time of receiving into the Publick Grammar School established in the City of *New York*, such S[c]holars as are now Beginners. The Publick is hereby again Informed That there are two Time a year apponted for Receiving such Scholars; *Viz*, The Months of *August* and *February*, such Schollars as are fit for any of the Classes will be received at any time. [New-York Gazette, Numb. 560⁴, July 18 to 25, 1736.]

The foregoing act of Oct. 14, 1732, having expired by its own limitation, on the 1st day of December, 1737, an act embodying the same general provisions, but limited to the term of one year from the

same date, was passed by the General Assembly. A strenuous opposition to the bill, while pending in the General Assembly, is indicated by the fact that the ayes and noes on two substantive motions in the committee of the whole are entered upon the Journal, and that one of these motions, that for continuing the appropriation from the Hawkers and Pedlars' Fund, prevailed by a majority of but one vote; the other, authorizing New York city to assume its share of the pecuniary burden, gained a majority of seven.

The Journal record is as follows (omitting routine items sufficiently indicated by memoranda annexed to the act as hereafter given):

[In General Assembly.]

Die Martis, 3 ho. P. M. Oct. 18, 1737.

* * * *

Simon Johnson, Esq; moved for Leave to bring in a Bill to continue an Act of the General Assembly of this Colony, entitled, *An Act, to encourage a public School in the City and County of New York, for teaching Latin, Greek, and Mathematicks.*

Ordered, That Leave be given to bring in a Bill accordingly.

* * * *

Die Mercurij, 3 ho. P. M. Nov. 30, 1737.

The House resolved itself into a Committee of the whole House, upon the Bill, entitled, [as above]; after some Time spent therein,

A Motion was made, by *David Jones*, Esq; and the Question was put, whether Mr. *Malcolm*, the *Latin* School Master, be allowed *Forty Pounds*, per *Ann.* out of the Moneys to arise, by Virtue of the Act, for licensing Hawkers and Pedlers within this Colony.

For the Affirmative.

Col. *Matthews*,
Capt. *Livingston*,
Mr. *Abraham Lot*,
James Alexander, Esq;
Mr. *Speaker* [Lewis Morris, Jr.],
Col. *Schuyler*,
Capt. *Winne*,
Capt. *Brat*,
Johannis Lot, Esq;
Mr. *Verplank*,
Col. *Philipse* [Frederick],
Col. *Morris* [Lewis Morris, Sen.],
Col. *Rensselaer*.

For the Negative.

Adolph Philipse, Esq;
Col. *Beekman*,
David Jones, Esq;
John Walter, Esq;
Col. *Hicks*,
Col. *Chambers*,
Mr. *Tur Boss*,
John Lecount, Esq;
Mr. *Hardenbergh*,
David Pierson,
Major *Platt*,
Major *Mott*.

It's carried in the Affirmative.

A motion was made, and the Question was put, whether Mr. *Malcolm*, the *Latin* School Master, be allowed *Forty Pounds*, per *Ann.* from the City of New York.

For the Affirmative.

[The same as on the former motion, except Mr. Abraham Lot,]; also,
Mr. *Hardenbergh*,
Col. *Hicks*,
David Jones, Esq;
David Pierson.

For the Negative.

[The same as on the former motion, except *David Jones*, Esq; Col. *Hicks*; Mr. *Hardenbergh*; and *David Pierson*]; also, Mr. *Abraham Lot*.

It's carried in the Affirmative.

A motion was made, and the Question was put, whether Mr. *Malcolm's* Salary be continued for a longer Time than one Year?

It's carried in the Negative.

*

*

*

*

*

*

*

*

Die Jovis, 3 ho. P. M. Dec. 1, 1737

The House resolved itself into a Committee of the whole House, upon the Bill, entitled, [as above]; after some Time spent therein, Mr. Speaker resumed the Chair; and *Simon Johnson*, Esq; reported from the Committee, That they had gone through the Bill, altered the Title, made several Amendments, and added several Clauses thereto; which they had directed him to report, when the House will please receive the same.

Ordered, That the Report be now received.

Simon Johnson, Esq; accordingly reported the Amendments and Clauses, which the Committee had made to the Bill, and which they had directed him to report to the House; and he read the Report in his Place, and afterwards delivered the Bill, with the Amendments and Clauses in at the Table; where the same was again read, and agreed to by the House.

Ordered, That the Bill, with the Amendments and Clauses be ingrossed.

*

*

*

*

The following copy of the act under consideration, which is nearly identical in its recitals and provisions with that of Oct. 14, 1732, is a transcript of the original manuscript in the Office of the Secretary of State:

AN ACT for the further Encouragement of a Public School in the City of New York for Teaching Lattin Greek & Mathematics

Whereas an Act of the General Assembly of this Colony Passed in the Sixth year of his present Majisties Reign Intituled an Act to Encourage a Public School in the City of New York for Teaching Lattin Greek and Mathematics is Expired by its own Limitation.

And whereas a Liberal Education is not only a very great Accomplishment but the Properest means to attain to knowledge Improve the mind Morality & good Manners and to make men Better wiser and more usefull to their Country, as well as to themselves

And whereas the City and Colony of New York abounds with youths of a Genius not Inferiour to other Countries, it must undoubt- edly be a Loss to the Publick and a Misfortune to such youths if they

are destitute of the opportunity to Improve their Capacities by Education

And whereas M^r. Alexander Malcolm the Present publick School Master has given Satisfactory proof of his abilities to Teach Lattin Greek & the Mathematicks, But as the Income of that School Falls Short of a comfortable Support for himself & Family. It is therefore conceived reasonable that a Suitable Encouragement Should be given and Provided by the Publick, under such Regulations & Restrictions as may Effectually answer the good Ends & Purposes thereby proposed.

Be it therefore Enacted by his Honour the Lieutenant Governour the Council and the General Assembly, and it is hereby Enacted by the Authority of the Same, that there shall be one Publick School Established and kept in the City of New York to Teach Lattin Greek and all the Parts of the Mathematicks from the first day of December in this present year one thousand Seven hundred & thirty Seven, to the first Day of December then next ensuing, and that the above named Alexander Malcolm shall be the Master thereof During that time under the Regulations & Restrictions & for the rewards and encouragement hereinafter & in an act Intituled an Act for Licencing Hawkers & Pedlars within this Colony is Mentioned.

And be it further Enacted by the authority aforesaid that the above named School Master or the School Master of such School for the time being Shall for & in Consideration of the Reward & Encouragement hereinafter and in the last mentioned Act be and hereby is obliged during the time aforesaid to provide at his own Cost & Charge in the City of New York a proper & Convenient House or Room & therein during the time and Term aforesaid (Sundays and the usual Holy days only excepted) To teach Gratis, and without any farther reward or consideration from any Person whatsoever than what is allowed to him by this Act in the best manner He is able, the Lattin & Greek Languages, arithmetick & all other Branches of the Mathematicks, or in such of them as the Said School Master shall be ordered & Directed by the Persons hereinafter vested with the Power to give such orders & Directions the number of Twenty youths in the Proportion following that is to say—

For the City & County of New York Ten, For the City and County of Albany Two, For Kings County, one For Queens County one, For Suffolk County one For West Chester one, For Richmond one For Orange County one, For Ulster County one, & For Dutchess County one.

And be it further Enacted by the authority aforesaid that the youths so to be Taught are to be recommended in manner following. That is to say For the Cities & Counties of New York & Albany, by the respective Mayors, Records & Aldermen thereof, and for the Several Counties by the Justices at the General Sessions of the Peace to be held for those Counties respectively and in Such Recommendations under their hands, They are respectively to certifie the name & names of such youth or youths his and their age (which is not to be under nine years) and that They have been well Instructed in

reading & writting of English & in such certificate is to be added a Command to the School Master for the time being to receive Such youth or youths as a Scholar or Scholars who is accordingly to receive him or them into his School, and to Teach him or them in Such manner, as he by Such Certificate or Order shall be directed and the Persons aforesaid are hereby Impowered and Directed not only to Grant Such Certificates & orders Gratis But in like manner from time to time to Supply Such Vacancies as shall or may happen in the Said School in the Said Number of Youths, by Death or otherwise during the Continuance of this Act.

And be it Enacted by the Same authority, that if the Said Mr. Malcolm or the School Master for the time being Shall at any time during the Term aforesaid, Refuse to Receive or Teach the Youths Sent to him for that Purpose, in the manner above mentioned, It shall absolutely Barr him of the reward by this act allowed to him, Provided the number of Such Youths do not exceed the number herein before Limited, nor shall it be deemed a default in him, if the said Cities or Counties Shall at any time Recommend or send a Less number than They hereby have a Right to do. And to the end the School hereby Intended, may be duly & orderly kept, and the aforesaid scholars well Instructed

Be it further Enacted by the Same authority, That the Justices of the Supream Court, the Rector of Trinity Church, and the Mayor Recorder & aldermen of the City of New York for the time being or the Major part of Them, Shall be & hereby are Impowered constituted and appointed Visitors of the Said School for the Term aforesaid, and Vested with a Power to remove the Master for the Time being for Misbehaviour or Neglect of his Duty, and upon his removal to Elect Appoint & Establish another in his Place, as also whenever the Masters Place is void by any other means whatsoever during the term aforesaid, the Visitors aforesaid or the Major part of them are hereby further authorized & Impowered to Elect appoint & Establish a Master in such Place so become void, and the Master so by them Elected, Appointed & Established, Shall be Intituled to such Proportion of the Salary or Reward during the time of his Service as the Master aforesaid have been, had he continued.

Provided and be it Enacted by the Same authority that the before named Alexandar Malcolm hereby appointed master of the said Public School Shall not be removed during the term aforesaid, Except for Misbehaviour or Neglect of his Duty in the keeping of the Said School or in teaching of the Youths in manner aforesaid.

And for the further Encouragement of the Said School Master or the School Master for the time being

Be it Enacted by the authority aforesaid, that over and above the Sum or Sums of Money annually to be raised in the City of New York by Virtue of an act Intituled an act for Settling a Ministry and raising a Maintenance for them in the City of New York, Counties of Richmond, West Chester & Queens County, Passed in the fourth year of King William & Queen Mary, There Shall at the same time in the Same Manner & by the Same Persons be assessed Levyed and Collected & Paid to the Treasurer of the Said City, during the con-

tinuance of this act the Sum of Forty Pounds Currant Money of this Colony, besides the Charge of Collecting & Paying the Same, For which Sum so to be paid during the Said Time, the Mayor of the Said City, for the time being, in Common Council Convened is to Issue Warrants for the Same, on the City Treasurer Payable Quarterly to the above named Mr. Malcolm or the School Master for the time being, and the Said Mayor the Said Treasurer, and all Persons who are to Assess Levy and Collect the above mentioned Tax for the Minister & Poor are hereby Strictly Charged & Commanded to act Conformable to the true Intent & meaning of this Clause.

And be it further Enacted by the authority aforesaid that this act, Shall be Deemed a Public act and accepted as Such in all courts, & by all officers within this Colony.

City of New York Die Sabati 3^d December 1737.

In the Eleventh Year of his Ma'tys reign General Assembly for the Colony of New York This Bill having been read three times *Resolved* that this Bill do Pass.

LEWIS MORRIS *Jun^r Speaker.*

New York December the 16th 1737

I Assent to this Bill enacting the same and order it to be enrolled.
GEO CLARKE

[Endorsed] "Die Sabati 3^d Decembe^r 1737.

"This Bill being Passed

"Ordered That Capt Winne do carry the Bill to the council & desire their concurrence thereto
LUDLOW *Cl*

[*In Council.*]

"1737—Decr. 6th read the 1st time and ord a 2^d reading.—7th read "a 2^d time & remitted—8th reported by Mr. Horsmanden without "amendment & ordered a 3^d reading—9th read 3^d time & passed

On the day of the final passage of the foregoing act by the Council (ten days prior to its approval by the acting Governor), a petition from Mr. Malcolm, for relief, in respect to a deficiency in the fund set apart for a moiety of his salary, was presented to the General Assembly, and adverse action was taken thereon, as appears by the following extract from the Journal :

[*In General Assembly.*]

Die Martis, 3 ho. P. M. Dec. 6, 1737.

* * * *

A Petition of *Alexander Malcolm*, was presented to the House, and read, setting forth, That by Virtue of an Act of General Assembly, passed in the Year 1732, he was intituled to *Eighty Pounds, per Annum*, for five Years; whereof *Forty Pounds* yearly, was laid upon the Fund of the Pedlers License, and that by Failure of said Fund, there is now a Deficiency unpaid to him of *One Hundred and Fifteen Pounds, Two Shillings and Six-pence*, therefore

humbly prays this honourable House will order the Payment of said Deficiency, and relieve him from the Difficulty of so great a Disappointment.

And a Debate arising thereupon,

A Motion was made, and the Question was put, whether the aforesaid *One Hundred and Fifteen Pounds, Two Shillings and Six-pence*, be a Debt due from this Colony?

For the Affirmative.

Simon Johnson, Esq;
James Alexander, Esq;
 Capt. *Livingston*,
 Col. *Morris*,
 Capt. *Winne*,
 Col. *Rensselaer*,
 Mr. *Verplanck*.

For the Negative.

Col. *Schuyler*, did not vote.
 Col. *Chambers*,
David Jones, Esq;
John Walter, Esq;
 Mr. *Hardenbergh*,
Jacobus Turboss, Esq;
 Major *Mott*,
John Lecount, Esq;
Johannis Lot, Esq;
 Mr. *Abraham Lot*.
 Col. *Hicks*,
 Col. *Matthews*,
 Mr. *Peirsen*,
 Major *Platt*,
Adolphe Philipse, Esq,
 Col. *Beekman*,
 Capt. *Bratt*,

It's carried in the Negative.

A Motion was made, and the Question was put, whether the Petition be rejected?

For the Affirmative.

[The members voting for the Negative, on the former motion.]

For the Negative.

[The members voting for the Affirmative on the former motion];
 also, Col. *Schuyler*.

It's carried in the Affirmative.

Ordered, That the said Petition be rejected accordingly.

Governor Clarke's views on this subject are indicated by the following extracts from a letter to the Lords of Trade:

New York June 2, 1738.

My Lords

I do myself the honor to send to your Lord^{ships} the Acts of Assembly passed last Session. . . . I beg leave to mention the titles of the Acts, and to make such remarks on them as I presume to hope may give your Lordships satisfaction.

*

*

*

*

N^o 21. An Act for the further encouragement of a publick school [etc].

N^o 22. An Act to restrain Hawkers and Pedlars [etc.]

Being confident that publick schools for the education of youth will always find countenance from your Lordships I will lay the last two

Bills before you without any further remarks in their favour; I wish the Assembly had made the reward greater than it is like to be, from the last of these Bills. that money was apply'd before, to the like use but fell short of the sum intended, nor could the School master get any redress tho he petition'd for it or got some of his friends to move the house in his behalf; it is not likely it will bring in more now however the master having at present no other way of living is obliged to submit.

*

*

*

*

GEO: CLARKE.¹

Mr. Malcolm subsequently renewed his petition for the same object, with probably deserved success:

[In General Assembly.]

Die Jovis, 3 ho. P. M. Oct. 16, 1740.

The Memorial and Petition of *Alexander Malcolm*, was presented to the House, and read, setting forth, That the General Assembly of this Colony, the 9th of *August* 1732, taking into Consideration, the great Use and Value of Education and Learning, with the proper Means thereof in this Country, and the Necessity of publick Schools, passed a Bill, establishing a publick School in the City of *New-York*, for the Space of five Years, for teaching the *Latin* and *Greek* Languages and *Mathematicks*, and appointed your Petitioner Master thereof, allowing a yearly Salary of *Eighty Pounds* Currency, *viz. Forty Pounds*, to be paid by a Tax raised on the City of *New-York*; and *Forty Pounds*, to be paid out of the Money arising from the Fund of Pedlers and Hawkers; but at the Expiration of the said five Years, that Fund was deficient *One Hundred and Eleven Pounds, Two Shillings and Six-pence*, of the Salary to be paid out of it, for the whole Time; whereupon the Promises considered of a faithful discharge of a laborious and important Service to the Country, the said Petitioner relies upon the Justice and Equity of the honourable House, for such a Relief, as is agreeable to the Nature of the Case.

A Motion was made, and the Question was put, whether Mr. *Malcolm*, had according to the Act, entitled, *An Act, to encourage a public School in this City of New-York, for teaching Latin, Greek and Mathematicks*; an equitable Demand for Arrearages set forth by his Petition? It was carried in the Affirmative, in Manner following, *to wit.*

For the Affirmative.

Col. *Morris*,
Col. *Schuyler*,
Col. *Moore*,
Col. *Philipse*,
Mr. *Purdy*,
Capt. *Winne*,
Mr. *Bradt*,

For the Negative.

Mr. *Nicol*,
Mr. *Lecount*,
Mr. *Gale*,
Mr. *Turboss*,
Mr. *Pierson*,
Mr. *Hardenbergh*,
Mr. *Abraham Lott*,

¹ N. Y. Col. Doc., vi, 117-119.

For the Affirmative.

Col. *Rensselaer*,
 Mr. *Ludlow*,
 Mr. *Stilwell*,
 Col. *Lott*,
 Capt. *Livingston*,
 Col. *Beekman*,
 Mr. *Clarkson*,

For the Negative.

Mr. *Cornel*,
 Mr. *Jones*,

A comparison of this vote with that of Dec. 6, 1737, on the same question, shows that of fifteen members present on both occasions, three, viz., Mr. Bradt, Col. Lott and Col. Beekman, changed their votes in favor of the petitioner, and that among the old members he thus secured a majority of two. The members voting only on the latter occasion stood six affirmative to three negative, making a total majority of five in favor of discharging the amount claimed by the worthy schoolmaster, who seems, however, to have lost the use of his money for at least three years.

The General Assembly at once formally confirmed the foregoing vote by the adoption of the following resolution and order :

Resolved, That said Arrears be discharged by the Act, entitled, *An Act, to restrain Hawkers and Pedlers within this Colony, from selling without Licence.*

Ordered, That Col. *Beekman* and Col. *Morris*, prepare and bring in a Bill, to pay unto the Rev. Mr. *Malcolm*, the Sum of *One Hundred and Eleven Pounds, Seven Shillings and Six-pence*, out of the Funds for licensing Hawkers and Pedlers.

* * * *

Die Veneris, 9 ho. A. M. Oct. 17, 1740.

Col. *Morris* (according to Order) presented to the House, a Bill, entitled, *An Act, to pay unto the Rev. Mr. Alexander Malcolm, the Sum of One Hundred and Eleven Pounds, Seven Shillings and Six-pence, out of the Funds for licensing Hawkers and Pedlers*; which was read the first Time, and ordered a second Reading.

* * * *

This bill was duly enacted into a law, of which the following is a copy, from the original manuscript on file in the office of the Secretary of State :

AN ACT to pay to the Reverend Mister Alexander Malcolm, The Sum of One Hundred and Eleven pounds, Seven Shillings and six pence, out of the fund therein mentioned.

WHEREAS THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY by an ACT passed in the Sixth Year of his present Majestyes Reign Entitled AN ACT to Encourage a publick School in the City of New York for Teaching Latin, Greek and Mathematicks; which act was to Continue and be of force for five Years, in which act among other things it is enacted, that

Alexander Malcolm shall be the Schoolmaster of the Said Publick School, and as Reward for that Service it is by the Said Act provided and enacted, That out of the fund of Hawkers and pedlars he shall Receive a Sum for the Said five Years not less than Two hundred pounds; and the act for Licencing hawkers and pedlars not bringing in Sufficient to discharge the Said Sum of Two hundred pounds and the General Assembly conceiving, That the part of the Two hundred pounds that remains Yet Unpaid to the Said Alexander Malcolm, is a just debt due from this Colony; and it appearing by the Treasurer's accounts that there is Still Unpaid, The Sum of One hundred Eleven pounds Seven Shillings and Six pence

Be it therefore Enacted by his honour The Lieutenant Governour The Council and the General Assembly and it is hereby Enacted by the authority of the Same, That out of the Monies arisen and to arise by an Act Entituled, an Act to restrain Hawkers and pedlars within this Colony from Selling without Licence, passed in the Thirteenth Year of his Majesties Reign, The Treasurer Shall pay to the said Alexander Malcolm or Order the Sum of One hundred Eleven pounds Seven Shillings and six pence In manner following, That is to Say Ten dayes after the publication of this Act all the Money already in the Treasury, arisen by the aforesaid Act of Hawkers and pedlars, and so every six Months thereafter Until the whole sum of one hundred Eleven pounds Seven Shillings and Six pence is paid, and his Receipts Shall be to the said Treasurer a Sufficient discharge for so much Money

New York Nov^r 23 1740

I assent to this Bill enacting the Same and order it to be enrolled
GEO CLARKE

[Endorsed] AN ACT to Pay the Reverend M^r Alexander Malcolm the Sum of £111: 7s: d6 out of the Fund therein Mentioned.

Die Luna 20th Octo. 1740

This bill being Passed

Ordered

That M^r Verplank & M^r Clarkson do carry this Bill to the Council and desire their Concurrence thereto.
GEO. DUNCAN Cl.

City of New York Die Lunæ
20th October 1740.

In the Fourteenth year of His Matys reign General Assembly for the Colony of New York This bill having been read Three times
Resolved, This bill do Pass.

D PHILIPSE Speaker.

P. M: 1740. October 23^d: read 1st time & ordered a second reading.

P. M: 27th read a second time & committed reported by M^r Horsmanden wthout amendm^t & ordered a third reading
29th read the third time & passed

It does not appear, unless from the act itself, in what specific way Mr. Malcolm became possessed of that portion of his salary, payable from the "Hawkers and Pedlars' Fund;" but we have full information so far as relates to the portion paid by the corporation of N. Y.

city, viz., by quarterly Warrants on the Treasurer, issued by the Mayor, on the order of the Common Council, as appears from their Minutes. The following is a copy of the first order of the Common Council, relative to this subject, dated June 8, 1733:

Ordered that the Mayor Issue his Warrant to the Treasurer to pay unto M^r Alexander Malcolm the Public Schoolmaster of this City or Order the Sum of ten pounds curr^t Money of this Colony out of the Moneys in his hands Raised by vertue of an act of General Assembly of this Colony made in the sixth year of his present Majestys Reign entitled AN Act to encourage a Publick School in the City of New York for Teaching Latin, Greek and Mathematicks, it being in full of one Quarter of a years Reward or Sallary due to the said Alexander Malcolm and ending the first day of this Instant June.¹

* * * *

Similar orders were given at regular intervals, for a period of service ending Dec. 1, 1738, at which time the second act providing for the support of the school expired by its own limitation. From this time we hear nothing further concerning either the school or the school master, except Mr. Butler's statement that the act of 1737 "was not afterwards renewed; but the school was again continued, and is said to have formed the germ of Columbia College."²

But for the grievances set forth in the annexed petition, it is doubtful whether the petitioner would have been known to us as one of the schoolmasters of his time:

To His Excellency George Clark Esq^r Lieut^t Governor of the Province of New York &c.

The Humble Petition of Walter Hetherington

May it Please your Excellency to Know that I your Petitioner have of Late been a School-master at the Ferry and thanks be to God have given Satisfaction to most persons in the Education of their Children till by the Instigation of others they did Last May procure another to set up the profession in Oposition to me, and Last week two of my Neighbors viz^t John Stockford and Samuel Hopson Butchers having some Difference together the said John Stockford Cursing and Swearing in a most horrid Manner your Petitioner intercepted thinking to be a Mediator of peace and he immediately us'd me in the Like manner Swearing revenge against me and without farther provocation as by Sufficient Evidence may appear rashly applied to Christopher Codwisse Esq^r (a person very much animated against me) in the Nature of asking his advice who told him to come the next Day and the said Codwise being then in a Hurry to come over to New York told him to come to him at Night but ere the said Codwise return'd which was about Ten o'clock the said

¹ Minutes of the Common Council (MS.), iv, 808.

² Alb. Inst. Trans., i, 178, 179.

John Stockford and his Family was in Bed. But the said Codwise sent to call him to him to Mr^s Counsell's at the Ferry House and he called him aside and advis'd him to Swear the peace against your Petitioner and that he was in Danger of his Life and if he would come to his house the next Morning he would give him his Oath with advice. Your Petitⁿ Wife (We living under the same Roof) overheard the said Stockford declare to his Wife at his return from Mr. Codwise and he accordingly went the next Morning and took his Oath Whereupon the said Codwise Issued out a Warrant against your Petitioner who being a Native of England and unacquainted with the Laws and Customs of this Colony have since kept out of their Way But now your Petitioner is informed that he the said Codwise hath granted a Warrant of Contempt; Whereupon your Petit^r was advis'd to make his application to Samuel Garitson Esq^r the Late Judge of the Sessions for the County who will'd me to Draw a Petition to your Excellency Wherefore your Petitioner most Humbly beseecheth your Excellency out of your Great Compassion and Goodness to allay the Great Troubles I have met with and am Like to be Plung'd into by the Unmerciful hands I have to deal with Your Petitioner not being in a Capacity to Contest with them in Law Your Petitioners Wife together with two Small Children being now destitute of Relief She hath been with the said Codwise and told him she intended This who imperiously replied . . . , you Do you Tantalize me with the Governour whereby I Leave it to your Excellency's Consideration what will become of me and my poor Family without some Mitigation from your Excellency for your Petitioner who begs leave to Subscribe himself your Excellency's

Most Obedient Humble Servant

W. HETHERINGTON

Endorsed,

Petition of Walter Hetherington agt Christopher Codwise. 9 Aug^t 1739 Copy of this to Mr. Codwise.¹

It having been previously shown that during the Dutch administration all persons were restrained from teaching school without official license, and that the early English Governors were also instructed to enforce a like requirement, it remains to add, that this regulation seems to have fallen into disuse during Governor Hunter's administration, the latest license we have seen being that issued by him to Allane Jarratt, in 1712, as heretofore given. Whether this came to be regarded as an arbitrary requirement, which could not well be enforced in a province rapidly advancing toward free institutions, or whether some other consideration prevailed with the crown and its officers, we do not propose to inquire; but barely allude to the fact above stated, for the sake of remarking that no legislative act to that

¹ N. Y. Col. MSS., lxxii, 120.

effect was ever passed in this Province, and that a bill introduced in the Council for the purpose of reviving this restriction, seems to have been dropped in the committee of the whole, as appears from the following record :

[In Council.]

Monday, February the 17th, 1745, P. M.

* * * *

The Hon^{ble} Archibald Kennedy moved for leave to bring in a Bill "to Restrain all Dancing Masters Schoolmasters or Teachers of Youth in any Art or Science from Teaching without License & taking the oaths"

Ordered, that Leave be given accordingly

Pursuant whereto a Bill was presented to the Council Entituled, "An Act to restrain" [etc., as above]

Then the said Bill was read the 1st time &

Ordered a second reading

* * * *

Tuesday, February the 18th, 1745, P. M.

* * * *

Then the said Bill [entitled as above] was read the 2^d time & *Ordered* to be committed : [but seems never to have been reported upon.]

* * * *

The establishment of "the first grammar school in the State west of Albany," is supposed (in the absence of original records) to have occurred at Cherry Valley, as early as 1743 or 1744. The event is thus chronicled by a local historian, the Hon. Wm. W. Campbell :

Mr. [Rev. Samuel] Dunlop, having received a classical education, opened a school for the instruction of boys, who came from the settlements upon the Mohawk, and from Schenectady and Albany. It is worthy of remark, that this was the first grammar school in the State west of Albany. The boys were received into his house, and constituted a part of his family. The extreme simplicity of the times may be learned from the fact that they often went into the fields, and there recited their lessons as they followed their instructor about while engaged in his usual avocations upon his farm ; several individuals along the Mohawk, who were afterwards conspicuous in the Revolution, thus received the first rudiments of their education.¹

Judge Campbell informs us that "the Freys and Yateses, of the Mohawk Valley, were educated by Mr. Dunlop, before the revolutionary war ;" and that "all the local records perished when Cherry Valley was destroyed."

For some further account of the life of Rev. Sam'l Dunlop, see

¹ Campbell's Annals of Tryon County, pp. 23, 24. See, also, Proceedings of the Albany Institute, i, 189.

Campbell's Annals, pp. 21, 22, 97, 99, 112, 113; also a letter from Mr. D. to Sir Wm. Johnson, dated Cherry Valley, Dec. 25, 1763, soliciting protection for that town from the Indians.¹

The "School of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church, in the City of New York," of which we had considerable to say in connection with the "Annals of Education in *New Netherland*," is scarcely mentioned in the extant records of the period embraced in the present chapter, though it will hereafter claim a larger share of notice. For the present, we barely quote a few paragraphs from Dunshee's History of this School:

RECAPITULATION [of Ch. III.]

The disseveration of the Dutch Church from the Colonial Government, the absence of Consistorial records, and there being no newspapers as yet established, the information respecting the School for several years after the Capitulation [1664] is necessarily very limited; but, identified with the Dutch Church as an institution of long cherished inheritance, she could not dispense with it, without the violation of principles and feelings totally incompatible with her constitution and aims.

* * * *

1665.—Evert Pietersen, who was appointed in 1661, continued to teach at least one year after the Capitulation.

1705.—Upon the existence of a vacancy, Lord Cornbury claimed the right of appointing the schoolmaster, notwithstanding the clause in the incorporation-act of William III (1696,) reserving this right to the ministers and Consistory. This claim led to a meeting of the Great Consistory, who determined to preserve their chartered privileges inviolate.

1726.—Barent De Foreest, schoolmaster.

1743.—Huybert Van Wagenen, previously appointed, kept the School, corner of Marketfield and Broad streets (1746). He was chorister for the Old and New Churches, alternately. Resigned, 1749.

Neither the date of Barent De Foreest's resignation, nor of Mr. Van Wagenen's appointment as schoolmaster, can be now definitely ascertained.

* * *

The population having extended "far up town," the deacons opened a school in Cortlandt street, of which Abraham Delanoy was appointed teacher. He commenced with *ten* Scholars, receiving from Consistory, in quarterly payments, the amount of money and firewood which Mr. Van Wagenen received for the same number. The catechetical instruction in the Garden Street Church was attended to by Mr. Van Wagenen, and in the Middle Church by Mr. Delanoy.²

* * *

The attention of Consistory having been engrossed for some time with other subjects of paramount importance, we find no direct refer-

¹ Sir Wm. Johnson MSS. (N. Y. State Library), viii, 63.

² Dunshee's History of the School, etc., pp. 58, 73, 74.

ence to the School in their records until the year 1743; when commences a series of minutes, from which we are able to furnish a full and uninterrupted chain of interesting facts, respecting the size and progress of the school, with a complete list of the Schoolmasters up to the present day.¹

It appears from Hon. Henry P. Hedges' "Two Hundredth Anniversary Address at East Hampton, L. I.," that that town was settled about 1650, and that among the early associates of the first settlers was one Charles Barnes, who was the first schoolmaster, the date of whose period of service is not stated. (pp. 4, 5.) It is further stated that the "Town Meeting" or "General Court" provided school teachers, and made regulations for the education of the youth, and that the salary of the schoolmaster was £33 per annum. *Idem*, p. 10.

Mr. Hedges and his relative, Dr. John C. Hedges, have made recent search, at our request, among the town records of East Hampton, but they fail to find anything further on this subject, or even the originals referred to in the aforesaid anniversary address.

A recently published volume of "Chronicles of Easthampton," by David Gardiner, gives somewhat fuller information in regard to Charles Barnes, and the general condition of education in that town, though the original authorities are not cited. We quote extracts as follows:

One of the greatest cares of the settlers after providing for their families a comfortable establishment, was the erection of a school house, and the engagement of teachers. At first the teacher received £30 sterling a year, and to induce a general attendance at school of the children of the settlement, a small part only of the whole charge was fixed upon the scholars, and the residue collected by a general tax upon the inhabitants. Charles Barnes, one of the first settlers, was for a number of years the instructor. He was the son of William Barnes, a gentleman of Eastwinch, in the County of Norfolk, England, who died in 1663, leaving him a portion of his estate. Barnes was succeeded by James Holdworth in '73, and he by Peter Benson, of the West Riding of Yorkshire, on Long Island, who was employed at the increased salary of £50 sterling a year. In 1682, the school consisted of twenty-nine scholars.

The great importance of education and the necessity of competent teachers, was a subject which had very seriously occupied the minds of the magistrates; and their efforts, seconded by those of the inhabitants, had been sedulously and successfully devoted to the maintenance of a sufficient school. These efforts, which for a series of years were sustained at the charge of the town, gave such impulse to the desire of instruction, that the school house was seldom vacant. The standard of education was not at this period very high, but it was at least equal to that which prevailed over a great part of the country,

¹ Dunshee's History of the School, etc., p. 58.

and fully sufficient for the transaction of business in the ordinary concerns of life. Limited as their sources of knowledge were, it was through them that this small community became, as the public records abundantly attest them to have been, so well acquainted with their political rights and so watchful in sustaining them. So deeply impressed were they with the importance of education to the prosperity of the colony, so sensibly did they feel that the efforts of their little community were altogether inadequate to provide even within its own small circle the proper means of intellectual improvement, that the people of this town, as early as 1678, called the attention of the established government to the importance of providing capable teachers. A resolution in the following words was proposed and adopted in that year, at a public meeting of the inhabitants. "It was agreed by a majority vote to refer the necessary employment of teachers, to the right honorable, the governor, and Court of Assizes." No public provisions, however, appear to have been made.¹

* * As early as 1711, and in the following years, when a classical education was not easily obtained, and the number of graduates at the few colleges then established was very limited, Harvard and Yale numbered several from this town [Easthampton] in the list of their students and graduates. . . . The schools of the town continued to be a subject of special interest, and in 1784, an academy for classical instruction was erected, being the first instituted under the State.² * * *

We are under further obligation to Dr. O'Callaghan for the following items, from the proof sheets of the "Proceedings of the Common Council of the City of New York" (the MS. Copy of which has already been cited as the "New Amsterdam Records"), in course of publication under his supervision:

[City of New York; In Common Council]

[Month and day not recorded], 1676.

* * *
To the Worshippfull y^e Deputy May^r & Aldermen of the City of New Yorke

THE Humble Peticon of Ebenezer Kirtland Sheweth That yo^r Petitioner is informed y^t yo^r worships are desirous to Erect and maintaine a School for y^e Educatinge and instructinge of Youth either in Readinge Writinge Arithmetick Lattin or Greeke Yo^r Petitioner supposinge himselfe to bee a Person fitt to vnd'take and Discharge such an Employ to y^t End addressed himselfe to his Hono^r the Gouverno^r for his good Likeinge therein who hath signified y^e same to your Petitioner & ord'ed him to make his addresses to yo^r worrpps to be y^e Mast^r of the said Schooll

¹ Gardiner's *Chronicles of Easthampton*, pp. 41, 42.

² *Idem*, pp. 42, 43.

Your Petition^r therefore humbly Prays yo^r Worrpps (if w^t Terms your Petition^r hath Pposed may be allowed of) that he may be forthwth Confirmed in y^e s^d Employ as Schooll Mast^r &c, he beinge willinge to Engage himselfe for y^e space of two Years
And y^r Petition^r shall Euer Pray &c.

To The Worshipfull the Mayo^r and Alldermen of this Citty of New Yorke

The humble Peticon of Mathew Hiller.

Humbly Showeth: That whereas yo^r Petion^r haueing (by his hono^r the Gouvernor) consent and with the approbation of this worshipfu^{ll} Cou^{nt} beene Serviceable to this Citty all moste two yeares & hath Indean'd the Instruction of Children of what age or sex so euer to there Parents Satesfaction: Yet not with standing some Complaintes haue beene made (unmerited) to your Worships which yowr Petetion^r und^rstanding made application to his hon^r Informing him the occation of sume neglects which was the greate wants of a Convenient howse wherein yowr Petion^r might settle and not bee trubled with soe often Removalls which I question not butt will bee taken in to Consideration but yo^r Petion^r und^rstanding of an obstruction by a Person Lately arriued here who Indeanth the Circumventing of yow^r Petitioner and Reape the fruite of his Labours of which Likewise your Petion^r hath fully Informed his hon^r who is by y^r Petionth humble Request Pleased to Leane the Ordering of a Scoole and maste^r to yow^r Worships Pleasure gineing yo^r Petion^r hopes and Encouragement that by y^r Worships wisdome things may bee better Regulated

Yowr Petetionth humble Request is hee may bee establisht in his Employ in which with the helpe of god hee doubth not satisfaction to yo^r Worships

And hee shall for Euer Pray &c.

Citty of New Yorke Att a Meetinge the 25th Day of August 1676

* * * *

Vpon the Peticons of Ebenezer Kirtland and Matthew Hilliard to be Schoollmasters of this Citty &c Itt is thought fitt and is hereby ordered y^t Matthew Hillyer Continue in y^e same hee behaueinge himselfe for y^e future better then y^e time Past And instead of 12th per Annum accordinge to former Order is only to have A Roome Provided for him

23^d November, 1697.

The Petition of M^r David Vilant being read desireing he may keep school in the publick Citty Hall as has been formerly Granted to him by the preceeding Mayor & Aldermen &c: is Refer'd to the Mayor to doe therein as he shall see Cause.

12th June, 1714.

Order'd that this Corporation do Petition the General Assembly for Leave to bring in a Bill to Enable this Corporation to Raise Money for Repairing the publick Gaols, Keeping a sufficient Bell-

mans Watch in the Room and Stead of A Constables Watch providing fire and Candle for them Maintaining a publick schoolmaster for teaching the poor to read & write Defraying the Expence of Executing of felons, Maintainance of A Publick Whipper and Other publick & Nessessary Charge not Exceeding one hundred and fifty pounds in one year and that the Mayor sign the Petition by Order of this Court and deliver it Accordingly.

9th April, 1720.

Order'd the Mayor Issue his Warr^t to the Treasurer to pay to Mr. William Huddleston the sum of Ten pounds Curr^t Money of this Province as a present of this Corporation for his Teaching severall poor Children to Read within this City. And Order'd that this be not brought into President.

14th October 1731.

Order'd the Mayor Issue his warrant to the Treasurer to pay to Mrs Sarah Huddleston widow or Order the sum of Eight pounds Current Money of New York as a Gratification for the trouble and Care she and her late Son Thomas Huddleston deceased have taken in teaching several poor children of this Corporation to Read and Write and Instructing them in the Principles of Religion, over and above the number allowed by the Venerable society for the propagation of the Gospel in foreign parts.

Having collated these "Annals" thus far, with as much thoroughness as our opportunities for research would allow, we now make a second pause, at the close of the year 1745; hoping hereafter to resume the narrative, beginning with the legislation of 1746, under which a moderate sum was raised "for the advancement of learning, and the founding of a College":—this being the first material aid provided for the institution which was chartered by the Crown, in 1754, as KING's, and by the State, in 1784, as COLUMBIA COLLEGE.

CATALOGUE

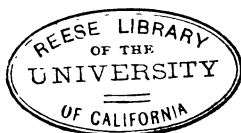
OF SCHOOLMASTERS MENTIONED IN THIS VOLUME.

	PAGE.
Alkis, Frederick, from <i>Hoorn</i>	10
Appel, Arien, [or Adrian Janse] <i>Albany</i>	62
Auchmuty, Rev. Samuel, <i>New York city</i>	118
Avery, John, <i>Rye</i>	114
Baene, Joost de, <i>New Utrecht</i>	64, 78, 74
Baird, Alexander, <i>Hempstead</i>	92
Barnes, Charles, <i>East Hampton</i> ..	145
Barrington, ———, <i>Staten Island</i>	118
Bartowe, Basil, <i>Westchester</i>	114
Beasley [Peasley], ———, <i>Albany</i>	105, 111
Beavois [Beauvois], Carel de, <i>Brooklyn</i>	81, 49, 50, 64
Becker, Jan Juriaense, <i>Albany, New Amsterdam</i>	20, 54, 58, 62
Beecker, see <i>Becker</i>	58
Bennet, Cornelius, <i>Canajoharie</i>	112
Bettersby, James, <i>Flushing</i>	121
Bleecker, see <i>Becker</i>	58
Bogardus, Cornelis, <i>Albany</i> ..	75
Bon Repos, Elias, <i>New Rochelle</i> ..	92
Bowne, John, <i>Flushing</i>	68
Brown, Adam, <i>Staten Island</i> (south precinct).....	98, 104, 118
Brownell, George, <i>New York city</i>	123
Bruynne, Francays de, <i>Flatbush</i>	63, 64
Bull, Amos, <i>New York city</i>	118
Capito, Mattys, <i>Wiltwyck (Kingston)</i>	51
Carelse, Joost, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	52
Carhart, John, <i>Rye</i> ..	114
Charlton, Richard, <i>Hempstead</i>	58, 122
Charlton, Rev. ———, <i>New York city</i> ..	118
Clarke, Andrew, <i>New York city</i> ..	87, 88, 89, 90
Clarke, Daniel, <i>Westchester</i>	114
Classen, Frans, <i>New Amsterdam</i> ..	54
Cleator, Joseph, <i>Rye</i> ..	97, 100, 108, 114, 116
Clogan, Rev. Thomas, <i>New York city</i> ..	101, 113
Cornelissen, Jan, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	9, 43, 44
Cornelius (Indian Sachem), <i>Fort Hunter (Lower Mohock Town)</i> ..	106, 112
Covelens, Jacob Jooste (see <i>Joosten</i>), <i>Albany</i>	62
Curler [Corler, Corlaar, Corlear], Jacobus van, <i>New Amsterdam</i> ..	19, 20, 53
Curtius, Alexander Carolus, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 32, 34, 35, 42, 45
Daniel (Indian), <i>Canajoharie (Upper Mohock Town)</i>	106, 111

	PAGE.
Davies, ———, <i>Southampton</i>	111
Davis, Goody, <i>Jamaica</i>	69
Delancy, Abraham, <i>New York city</i>	144
Denton, ———, <i>Oyster Bay</i>	100, 111
De Puy, John, <i>Staten Island</i>	104, 113
Dillon, Patrick, <i>Flatbush</i>	63
Drewit, Benjamin, <i>Staten Island</i>	104, 113
Dunlop, Rev. Samuel, <i>Cherry Valley</i>	143
Dupuy, ———, <i>Staten Island</i>	98
Dwight, Flint, <i>North Castle, Rye and White Plains</i>	114, 116
Egberts, ———, <i>Staten Island</i>	113
Ekelen [Eckelen], Johannes Van, <i>Flatbush</i>	63, 64, 65, 67, 72, 73
Ellison, Gabriel, <i>Flatbush</i>	63
Fayole, Prudent de la, <i>New York city</i>	92
fitz Gerald, Edward, <i>Westchester county</i>	93
ffoucatt, Andrew, <i>New York city</i>	90
Foreest, Barent de, <i>New York city</i>	144
Forster, William, <i>Westchester</i>	100, 114
Gage, Father Charles, S. J., (Latin teacher ?), <i>New York city</i>	71
Gancell, Jan, <i>Flatbush</i>	63
Gasheris, Stephen, <i>Kingston</i>	91
Gatehouse, Edward, <i>New York city</i>	123
Gelder, Johannes van, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	21, 55
Gerritse [Wyngaard], Luykas, <i>Albany</i>	62, 63
Gerritsz, see <i>Marken</i>	68
Gildersleeve, Richard, <i>Hempstead</i>	122
Gildersleeve, Thomas, <i>Hempstead</i>	99, 111, 123
Glover Charles, <i>Westchester</i>	100, 114
Gott, ———, <i>Westchester</i>	114
Hainelle, Michael, <i>Flatbush</i>	63, 64
Hall, ———, <i>Canajoharie</i>	112
Harrison, Father Henry, S. J., (Latin teacher ?), <i>New York city</i>	71
Hegeman, Adrian, <i>Flatbush, Midwout</i>	28, 49, 63, 64
Hetherington, Walter, <i>New York city</i>	141, 142
Hildreth, Thomas, <i>New York city</i>	112, 116
Hiller, Matthew, <i>New York city</i>	147
Hoboocken, Harman van, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	12, 13, 14, 17, 39, 44
Houlding [Houldsworth (?)], <i>Hempstead</i>	58
Houldsworth, Jonas, <i>Hempstead, Southampton, Huntington (?)</i>	36, 39, 50, 122
Hudde, Andries, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	19, 53
•Huddlestone, ———, <i>New York city and Rye</i>	116
Huddlestone [Huddleston], Thomas, <i>New York city, Jamaica</i>	92, 99, 101, 105, 112, 114, 148
Huddlestone, William, <i>New York city</i>	104, 112, 148
Ipendam, Adriaen Jansen van, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	16, 51, 52
Jamison, David, <i>New York city</i>	121, 122
Jansen, Aryaen (Arien), see <i>Ipendam, New Amsterdam</i>	9, 51
Jansz (Jansen), Andries, <i>Beverwyck</i>	12, 50
Jarratt, Allane, <i>New York city and province</i>	93, 142
Jeffray, James, <i>New York city</i>	92

	PAGE.
Johnson, Peter, "schol." (?), <i>Hempstead</i>	58
Johnston, Charles, <i>New York city</i>	124
Jones, ———, <i>Miles Square</i>	113
Joosten [Covelens], Jacob, <i>Albany, Flatbush, Wiltwyck (Kingston)</i>	51, 58, 63
Keeble, ———, <i>Oyster Bay</i>	111
Kirtland, Ebenezer, <i>New York city</i>	146, 147
Kneeland, ———, <i>Flushing and Huntington</i>	111
Leaky [Lealey], William, <i>South of Hempstead</i>	111
Leffert, William, <i>South of Hempstead</i>	111
Lindley, Henry, <i>Jamaica</i>	91
Loquart, James, <i>Jamaica</i>	118
Lubbertsen [Lubberts], Jan, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	20, 54
Luyck, Ægidius, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	82, 83, 84, 85, 45, 46, 47, 48
Lyde, James, <i>New York city</i>	123
Lynstead, Thomas, <i>Oyster Bay</i>	118
M'Leland, Colin, <i>Canajoharie</i>	112
Maenhout, Boudewyn, <i>Bushwyck</i>	36, 50
Makins, Thomas, <i>Flushing</i>	94
Malcolm, Alexander, <i>New York city</i> ... 124, 125, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134 135, 136, 138, 139, 140, 141	
Marcken [Marckje], Jan Gerritsen van, <i>Flatbush</i>	63, 64, 68
Miller, Benjamin, <i>Staten Island, West Precinct</i>	113
Mills, Richard, <i>Middleburgh</i>	30, 48, 49
Molenaar, Arent Evertsen, <i>New Amstel (Del.)</i>	50
Montagne, Johannes de la, <i>New Amsterdam, Harlem (New)</i> ... 11, 12, 18, 37, 38,	44
Montagne, William, <i>Kingston</i>	91
Moore, John, <i>Jamaica</i>	107, 111
Moubray, John, <i>Southampton</i>	75
Muirson, George, <i>New York city</i>	87, 90
Neau [Nau], Elias, <i>New York city</i>	91, 100, 101, 113, 119
Noon, Patrick, <i>Flatbush</i>	63
Noxon, Thomas, <i>New York city</i>	106, 112
Oecom, Samson, <i>Montauk</i>	120
Oliver, ———, <i>Mohock country</i>	101, 102, 111
Paulus (Indian), <i>Canajoharie</i>	112
Paulus, Petrus (Indian), <i>Canajoharie</i>	112
Peasley, ———, see <i>Beasley</i>	105
Pietersen, Evert, <i>New Amsterdam, South (Delaware) river</i> , 16, 17, 18, 19, 39, 40, 45,	144
Potts, ———, <i>Staten Island</i>	98
Price, ———, <i>Staten Island</i>	113
Provoost, David, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	52
Purdy, Samuel, <i>Rye</i>	114, 116
Rand, John, <i>Rye</i>	114
Reinier, ———, <i>Flatbush</i>	29, 50, 64
Remse, Rem, <i>Flatbush</i>	64
Remsen, Jores, <i>Flatbush</i>	63
Ridder, Evert, <i>Albany</i>	90
Rock, William, <i>Jamaica</i>	118
Roelansten, Adam, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	4, 41, 42, 43, 51
Rubell, John, <i>Flatbush</i>	63

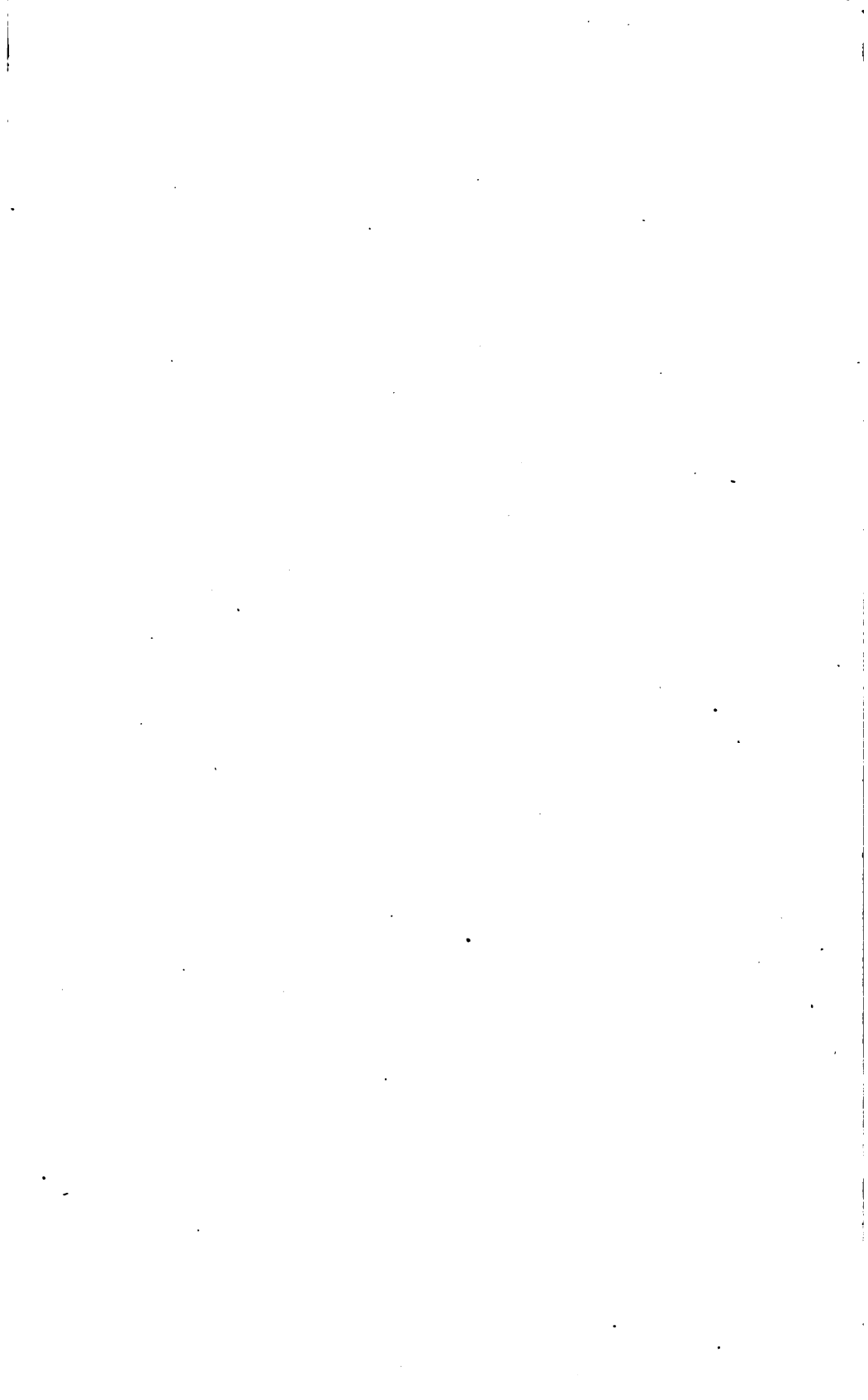
	PAGE.
Schaets, Rev. Gideon, <i>Rensselaerswyck</i>	12
Schenk [Schenck], Johannes, <i>Flatbush</i>	63, 64, 72, 73
Schoolmasters referred to, but not by name. . . 1, 2, 3, 5, 6, 8, 9, 10, 11, 15, 22, 27, 39	
60, 61, 62, 64, 69, 70, 71, 73, 75, 77, 80, 81, 82, 85, 86, 94, 96, 97, 99, 100, 104, 105	
107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 114, 115, 117, 119, 122, 123, 125, 143, 148	
Schoonmaker, Michael, <i>Flatbush</i>	63
Seabury, Nathaniel, <i>Westchester</i>	114
Seabury, Samuel, Jr., <i>Huntington</i>	111
Selover, Isaac, <i>Flatlands</i>	69, 117, 118
Sheriosby, Georgius, <i>Cow Neck</i>	118
Shutte, John, <i>Albany</i>	57
Sluys, Andries van der, <i>Esopus (Kingston)</i>	50
Smith, Thomas, <i>New York city</i>	61
Spencer, Rachel, <i>Hempstead</i>	69, 116
Steenburgh, Petrus van, <i>Flatbush</i>	63
Steenhuysen, Engelbert, <i>Bergen (N. J.)</i>	36, 37, 50
Stevensen, Jan, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	7, 9, 42, 43
Steyn, Hans, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	53
Storm, Derick, <i>Flatbush</i>	63, 64
Sturgeon, William, B. A., <i>Rye</i>	114
Swartt, Gerrit, <i>Albany</i>	62
Taylor, ———, <i>Staten Island</i>	98, 99, 107, 113
Temple, Thomas, <i>Hempstead, Jamaica</i>	111, 118
Thoresby, see <i>Sheriosby</i>	118
Thurston, William, <i>New York city</i>	123
Tiebout [Thibaud], Jan, <i>Flatbush</i>	63, 65, 67, 68
"Traveling Woman out of y ^e Jerseys," <i>Rye</i>	116
Verstius [Vestius, Vestens], William, <i>New Amsterdam</i>	12, 13, 44
Vilant, David, <i>New York city</i>	147
Vleck [Vleg], Paulus van, <i>Kinderhook</i>	89
Wagenen, Huybert van, <i>New York city</i>	144
Wall, Edward, <i>Johnstown</i>	112
Watts, ———, <i>Staten Island</i>	113
Welp, Anthony, <i>Flatbush</i>	63
Wetmore, James, <i>Rye</i>	114, 116
Wetmore, Rev. James, <i>New York city</i>	101, 113
Wetmore, Timothy, <i>Rye</i>	114, 116
Willett, ———, <i>Jamaica</i>	106, 111
Williamson, Francis, <i>Staten Island</i>	98, 104, 113
Wood, John, <i>New York city</i>	92
Wright, Andrew, <i>Staten Island</i>	107, 113
Wyngaard, see <i>Gerrits</i>	62, 63
Youngs, George, <i>Westchester</i>	114





140

141



THIS BOOK IS DUE ON THE LAST DATE
STAMPED BELOW.

AN INITIAL FINE OF 25 CENTS
WILL BE ASSESSED FOR FAILURE TO RETURN
THIS BOOK ON THE DATE DUE. THE PENALTY
WILL INCREASE TO 50 CENTS ON THE FOURTH
DAY AND TO \$1.00 ON THE SEVENTH DAY
OVERDUE.

NOV

14 1932

ICLF (N)

RIVERSIDE

INTER-LIBRARY
LOAN

MAY 1 1968

NOV 12 1963

150ct'55GB
OCT 15 1955 LU

3 Nov '55 TF

NOV 3 1955 LU

JUN 30 1967 57

REC'D
JUN 23 '67 - 2 PM

LOAN DEPT.



BOOKS ON PEDAGOGY,
FOR SALE BY
BARDEEN, Syracuse
Catalogue No. 749
Price, \$2.50

